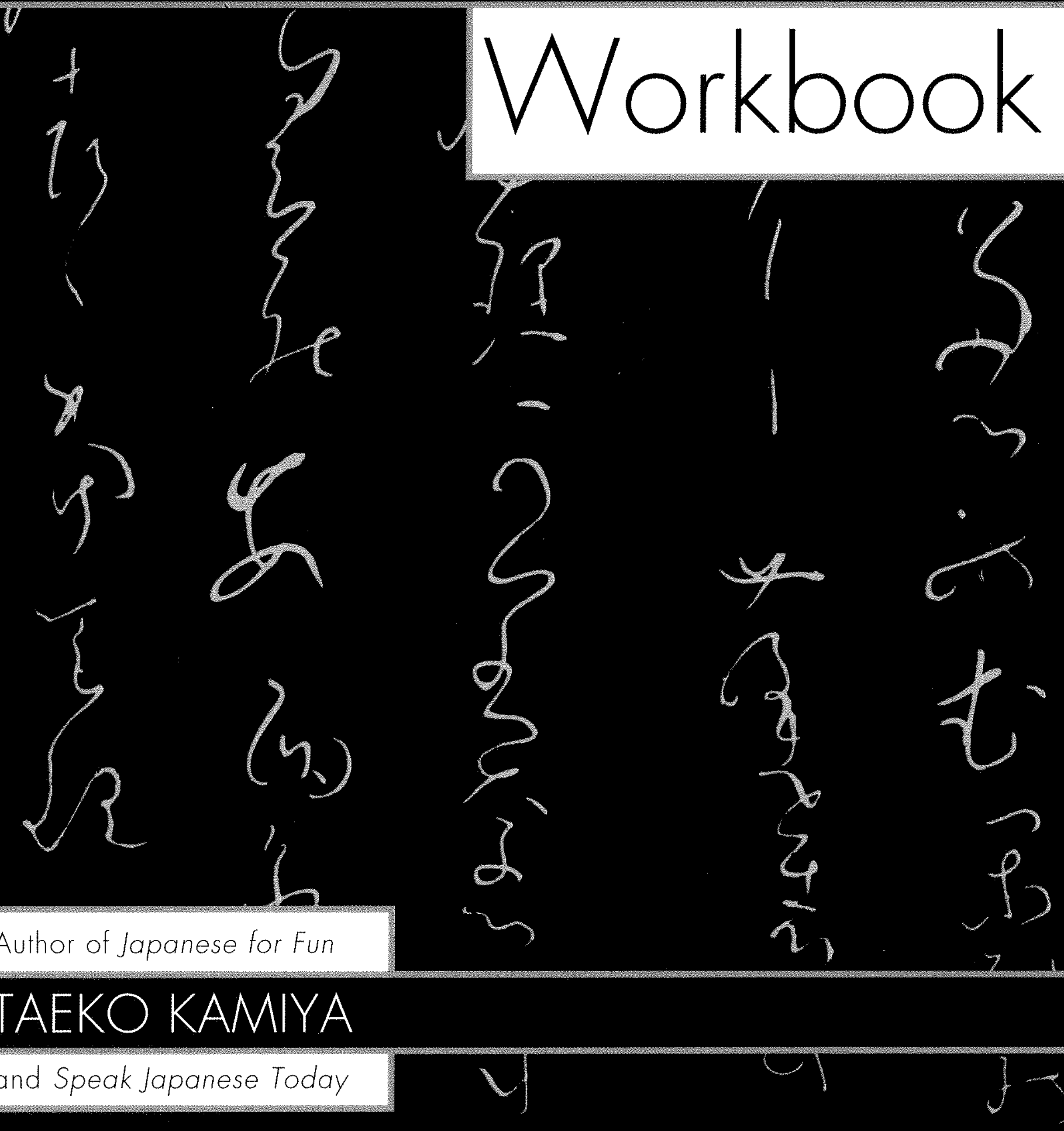
VISIT…

LANZAROTE

Caliente.COM

Japanese PARTICLE Workbook



Author of *Japanese for Fun*

TAEKO KAMIYA

and *Speak Japanese Today*

Japanese PARTICLE Workbook

TAEKO KAMIYA

WEATHERHILL

New York & Tokyo

Copyright © 1997 by Taeko Kamiya.

Protected by copyright under the terms of the International Copyright Union; all rights reserved. Except for fair use in book reviews, no part of this book may be reproduced for any reason by any means, including any method of photographic reproduction, without written permission.

First edition, 1998

Second printing, 2003

Published by Weatherhill, Inc., of New York and Tokyo, with editorial offices at 568 Broadway, Suite 705, New York, N.Y. 10012.

Printed in the U.S.A.

ISBN 0-8348-0404-2

Contents

Introduction

Key to Abbreviations

Japanese Particle Workbook

1 wa (1)
2 ka (1)
3 ga (1)
4 ni (1)
5 no (1)
6 wa (2)
7 ni (2)
8 e (1)
9 o (1)
10 to (1)
11 ya (1)
12 nado (1)
13 mo (1)
14 mo (2)
15 ni (3)
16 ni (4)
17 de (1)
18 to (2)
19 no (2)
20 kara (1)
21 yori (1)
22 made (1)
23 kurai (1)
24 hodo (1)
25 bakari (1)
26 de (2)
27 ka (2)
28 o (2)
29 o (3)
30 ni (5)
31 ni (6)
32 ni (7)
33 to (3)
34 to (4)
35 to ka (1)
36 de (3)
37 to (5)
38 yori (2)
39 yori (3)
40 kurai (2)
41 hodo (2)
42 ka (3)
43 mo (3)
44 ni (8)
45 o (4)
46 demo (1)
47 demo (2)

48	de (4)
49	kara (2)
50	ni (9)
51	ga (2)
52	ga (3)
53	o (5)
54	de (5)
55	de (6)
56	dake (1)
57	dake (2)
58	de (7)
59	demo (3)
60	mo (4)
61	demo (4)
62	bakari (2)
63	bakari (3)
64	tokoro (1)
65	ga (4)
66	kara (3)
67	nagara (1)
68	ga (5)
69	no (3)
70	kara (4)
71	node (1)
72	no (4)
73	no (5)
74	nara (1)
75	nara (2)
76	to (6)
77	ba (1)
78	ba (2)
79	ba (3)
80	tara (1)
81	tara (2)
82	tokoro (2)
83	te mo (1)
84	te mo (2)
85	te mo (3)
86	te wa (1)
87	nomi (1)
88	made (2)
89	sae (1)
90	sae (2)
91	noni (1)
92	nagara (2)
93	toka (1)
94	tari (1)
95	tari (2)
96	noni (2)
97	no (6)
98	kiri (1)
99	kiri (2)
100	tomo (1)
101	nagara (3)
102	shika (1)
103	shika (2)
104	shi (1)
105	shi (2)
106	tomo (2)
107	ni (10)
108	ka (4)
109	ka (5)
110	dano (1)
111	dano (2)
112	nado (2)
113	yara (1)
114	yara (2)
115	te mo (4)
116	tomo (3)
117	wa (3)
118	to (7)
119	nado (3)

120 kurai (3)
121 hodo (3)
122 hodo (4)
123 dake (3)
124 dake (4)
125 to (8)
126 to (9)
127 nari (1)
128 nari (2)
129 koso (1)
130 koso (2)
131 te wa (2)
132 ni (11)
133 ni (12)
134 ni shite wa (1)
135 ni totte (1)
136 ni tsuite (1)
137 tomo (4)
138 ga (6)
139 wa (4)
140 toshite (1)
141 toshite (2)
142 bakari (4)
143 dake (5)
144 nomi (2)
145 nari (3)
146 ga (7)
147 ya (2)
148 ka (6)
149 bakari (5)
150 bakari (6)
151 sura (1)
152 nado (4)
153 tomo (5)
154 tomo (6)
155 dokoro ka (1)
156 dake ni (1)
157 made (3)
158 mono no (1)
159 tokoro de (1)
160 keredomo (1)
161 keredomo (2)
162 ga (8)
163 keredomo (3)
164 ne (1)
165 ne (2)
166 ne (3)
167 nē (1)
168 yo (1)
169 yo (2)
170 kashira (1)
171 kana (1)
172 na (1)
173 na (2)
174 nā (1)
175 nā (2)
176 no (7)
177 wa (1)
178 sa (1)
179 koto (1)
180 koto (2)
181 mono (1)
182 tomo (7)
183 mono ka (1)
184 ya (3)
185 tara (3)
186 yara (3)
187 ze (1)
188 zo (1)

Alphabetical Finding List
Answers to Exercises

Introduction

What are Japanese particles? Particles are non-conjugate words that attach to main words and indicate the relationship of those words to the following word or the remainder of the sentence. There are also sentence-final particles that may comment grammatically on the entire sentence.

Some Japanese particles function in a manner similar to English words. For example, in the phrase *sensei to gakusei* (teacher and student) the particle *to* functions as the conjunction "and." Other particles have functions similar to prepositions, but they are placed after the words they modify, e.g., *Tokyo e* (to Tokyo), *Oda-san to* (with Mr. Oda). Still other particles have no equivalents in English, such as *wa* or *o*, which are attached to the topic (subject) or object of a sentence respectively, as in *Honda-san wa isha desu* (As for Mr. Honda, he's a doctor) and *Hon o yomimashita* (I read a book).

Are particles important? Absolutely. They must be learned in order to speak proper Japanese. Some particles may be omitted in casual conversation but not when formality is appropriate, and especially not in writing. Moreover, in some cases the wrong use of a particle may change the meaning of sentence entirely.

This book presents over 60 particles and their 188 usages. The particles are introduced in order of the frequency of their usage, from more common to less. Most particles are multi-functional, e.g., *Nihon de* (in Japan), *basu de* (by bus), *shigoto de* (because of work); therefore, each is followed by a number denoting the order of that particular usage: *de* (1), *de* (2), etc.

Each of the 188 usages is described briefly and then illustrated in sample sentences. After several particles and usages are introduced, exercises are given to test your understanding; answers appear at the end of the book. Only particles already introduced appear in the examples or exercises, although, of course, those already learned are used again for reinforcement. In order to get the best results, repeat examples and exercise sentences aloud, so that your ears get used to the sounds. A basic vocabulary is used for all sentences, which are presented in both characters and romanized Japanese, enabling you to concentrate fully on one purpose: learning particles.

This book may also be used as a reference work, for it contains an Alphabetical Finding List for all the particles, which may be consulted to refer to an explanation and example for any usage. Note that the usage numbers (1 through 188) take the place of page numbers for finding specific usages; likewise exercise numbers are used to find their corresponding set of correct answers. Overall, the book is designed in a way that will lead you step-by-step to a deeper understanding of Japanese particles and a greater facility with them. I do hope that it will prove to be of great help for all who use it.

Key to Abbreviations

Verb
present, past, and progressive forms of the verb

V-u
dictionary form of the verb

V-te
te-form of the verb

V-nakute
negative te-form of the verb

V-nai
nai-form of the verb

V-ta
ta-form of the verb

V-nakatta
negative ta-form of the verb

V-tai
tai-form of the verb

V-tari
tari-form of the verb

V-nakattari
negative tari-form of the verb

V-mai
mai-form of the verb

V-(masu)
masu-form of the verb without masu e.g. mi(masu), yomi(masu)

V-ba (V-e/-re + ba)
ba-form of the verb e.g. ikeba/mireba

V-nakereba
negative ba-form of the verb

V-ō/-yō
ō-form of the verb e.g. ikō/miyō

Adjective
present and past forms of the adjective

Adj.
Adjective

Adj. Noun
Adjectival Noun e.g. kirei na

Adj-i
dictionary form of the adjective

Adj-ku
ku-form of the adjective

Adj-kute
te-form of the adjective

Adj-kunakute
negative te-form of the adjective

Adj-katta
ta-form of the adjective

Adj-kattari
tari-form of the adjective

Adj-kunakattari
negative tari-form of the adjective

Adj-kereba (Adj-kere + ba)
ba-form of the adjective

Adj-karō
ō-form of the adjective, e.g. samukarō

Japanese
PARTICLE
Workbook

Indicates the topic of a sentence, conveying the meaning "as for…"

wa (1) は

1

Noun (topic = subject) + wa

Watashi **wa** isha desu.

私は医者です。

I am a doctor.
(As for me, I'm a doctor.)

Wada-san **wa** ashita kimasu.

和田さんは明日来ます。

Mr. Wada will come tomorrow.

Sono eiga **wa** omoshiroi desu.

その映画は面白いです。

The movie is interesting.

Kujira **wa** sakana de wa arimasen.

くじらは魚ではありません。

The whale isn't a fish.

Noun (topic ≠ subject) + wa

Ashita **wa** hatarakimasen.

明日は働きません。

Tomorrow I don't work.

Kaidan **wa** chūi shite kudasai.

階段は注意して下さい。

Be careful about the stairs.

Sono koto **wa** mō hanashita.

その事はもう話した。

I have already spoken about the matter.

Note: As the above examples indicate, the "topic" of a sentence can be, but is not always, the same as the subject of an English sentence.

At the end of a sentence, indicates a question.

ka (1) か

2

Sentence + ka

Anata wa gakusei desu **ka**.

あなたは学生ですか。

Are you a student?

Sumisu-san wa bengoshi desu **ka**.

スミスさんは弁護士ですか。

Is Mr. Smith a lawyer?

Kono hon wa omoshiroi desu **ka**.

この本は面白いですか。

Is this book interesting?

Ashita wa doyōbi desu **ka**.

明日は土曜日ですか。

Is tomorrow Saturday?

Tanaka-san wa kimashita **ka**.

田中さんは来ましたか。

Did Miss Tanaka come?

Ano kaidan wa tsukaimasen **ka**.

あの階段は使いませんか。

Don't you use that stairs?

Noun + wa + interrogative ... ka

Kore wa nan desu **ka**.

これは何ですか。

What is this?

Ano hito wa dare desu **ka**.

あの人はだれですか。

Who is that person?

Yamada-san wa dono kata desu **ka**.

山田さんはどの方ですか。

Which person is Mr. Yamada?

3 が ga (1)

Indicates the subject of a sentence when it is newly introduced or emphasized.

Noun (new information) + ga

Kōen **ga** arimasu.

公園があります。

There is a park.

Tori **ga** imasu.

鳥がいます。

There are birds.

Kodomo **ga** asonde imasu.

子供が遊んでいます。

Children are playing.

Hana **ga** saite imasu. Hana wa kirei desu.

花が咲いています。花はきれいです。

The flowers are blooming. They're pretty.

Note: The subject "hana" of the first sentence is followed by ga, while the topic "hana" of the second sentence (already known information) is followed by wa. Ga is used to mark an interrogative word used as a subject, as well as following the subject of the answering sentence (since this is new information).

Noun (emphasized) + ga

Kono kata **ga** Oda-san desu.

この方が小田さんです。

This person is Mr. Oda (whom I told you about).

Watashi **ga** ikimashita.

私が行きました。

I (not anyone else) went.

Interrogative pronoun + ga

Dare **ga** kimashita ka. Buraun-san **ga** kimashita.

だれが来ましたか。ブラウンさんが来ました。

Who came? Mr. Brown came.

Nani **ga** okorimashita ka. Jiko **ga** okorimashita.

何が起りましたか。事故が起こりました。

What happened? An accident happened.

Exercise 1 (1–3): Fill in the blanks with the correct particles (wa or ga).

1. Buraun-san ______ bengoshi desu.

ブラウンさん ______ 弁護士です。

Mr. Brown is a lawyer.

2. Kōen ______ arimasu. Kodomo ______ asonde imasu.

公園 ______ あります。子供 ______ 遊んでいます。

There is a park. Children are playing.

3. Tori ______ imasu. Tori ______ kirei desu.

鳥 ______ います。鳥 ______ きれいです。

There are birds. They are pretty.

4. Ano kaidan ______ tsukawanaide kudasai.

あの階段 ______ 使わないで下さい。

Don't use that staircase.

5. Doyōbi ______ dare ______ kimasu ka. Oda-san ______ kimasu.

土曜日 ______ だれ ______ 来ますか。小田さん ______ 来ます。

As for Saturday, who is coming? Mr. Oda is coming.

6. Dono hito ______ Wada-san desu ka. Ano hito ______ Wada-san desu.

どの人 ______ 和田さんですか。あの人 ______ 和田さんです。

Which person is Mr. Wada? That one is.

7. Gakusei ______ kimashita. Gakusei ______ Sumisu-san desu.

学生 ______ 来ました。学生 ______ スミスさんです。

A student came. The student is Mr. Smith.

8. Dono eiga ______ omoshiroi desu ka.

どの映画 ______ 面白いですか。

Which movie is interesting?

9. Ashita ______ hatarakimasen.

明日 ______ 働きません。

As for tomorrow, I won't work.

10. Iie, Wada-san ______ isha de wa arimasen. Yamada-san ______ isha desu.

いいえ、和田さん ______ 医者ではありません。山田さん ______ 医者です。

No, Mr. Wada isn't a doctor. Mr. Yamada is.

4 に ni (1)

Indicates the location or existence of animate and inanimate things.

Noun (location) + ni

Asoko **ni** kōen ga arimasu.
あそこに公園があります。
There is a park over there.

Ano kado **ni** nani ga arimasu ka.
あの角に何がありますか。
What is there at that corner?

Kōen **ni** kodomo ga imasu.
公園に子供がいます。
There are children in the park.

Heya **ni** dare ga imasu ka.
部屋にだれがいますか。
Who is in the room?

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (location) + ni

Sono hon'ya wa Kanda **ni** arimasu.
その本屋は神田にあります。
The bookstore is in Kanda.

Ginkō wa doko **ni** arimasu ka.
銀行はどこにありますか。
Where is the bank?

Oda-san wa kaigishitsu **ni** imasu.
小田さんは会議室にいます。
Mr. Oda is in the conference room.

Tanaka-san wa doko **ni** imasu ka.
田中さんはどこにいますか。
Where is Miss Tanaka?

5 の no (1)

Used between two nouns, indicates possession, location, or a modifying phrase.

Pronoun/noun + no

Kore wa watashi **no** jisho desu.
これは私の辞書です。
This is my dictionary.

Sore wa dare **no** kasa desu ka.
それはだれのかさですか。
Whose umbrella is that?

Tanaka-san **no** desu.
田中さんのです。
It's Miss Tanaka's.

Note: If the context is clear, the second noun can be omitted.

Noun + no + noun (location)

Tsukue **no** ue ni hako ga aru.

机の上に箱がある。

There is a box on the desk.

Heya **no** naka ni hito ga iru.

部屋の中に人がいる。

There are people inside the room.

Gakkō **no** ushiro ni kōen ga aru.

学校の後ろに公園がある。

There is a park behind the school.

Hanaya wa hon'ya **no** migi ni aru.

花屋は本屋の右にある。

The flower shop is to the right of the bookstore.

Noun (modifier) + no + noun

Tomu wa Nihongo **no** gakusei da.

トムは日本語の学生だ。

Tom is a student of Japanese.

eiga **no** kippu

映画の切符

a movie ticket

nikai **no** kyōshitsu

二階の教室

a classroom on the second floor

Ginza **no** resutoran

銀座のレストラン

a restaurant in Ginza

Indicates contrast between two items. The second item may be omitted when the contrasting element is implicit.

wa (2) は

Noun + wa ... Noun (contrast) + wa

Kanji **wa** muzukashii. Hiragana **wa** yasashii.

漢字は難しい。ひらがなは易しい。

Kanji is difficult. Hiragana is easy.

Tomu **wa** oyogimashita.

トムは泳ぎました。

Tom swam (but I didn't).

Note: Wa is pronounced with stress when the second item is omitted.

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (contrast) + wa

Gakusei wa kyō **wa** kimasen.

学生は今日は来ません。

As for the students, they don't come today (but will tomorrow).

Doyōbi wa Oda-san **wa** hataraki-masen.

土曜日は小田さんは働きません。

As for Saturdays, Mr. Oda doesn't work (but I do).

Double particles ni wa

Koko ni (wa) zasshi ga arimasu.
Asoko **ni wa** jisho ga arimasu.

ここに（は）雑誌があります。

あそこには辞書があります。

There are magazines here.
There are dictionaries over there.

Yamada-sensei wa kyōshitsu **ni wa** imasen.

山田先生は教室にはいません。

Prof. Yamada isn't in the classroom (but somewhere else).

Exercise 2 (4–6): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put wa, ga, or ni in the blanks

1. Ano kado _______ hanaya _______ arimasu.
あの角 _______ 花屋 _______ あります。
There is a flower shop at that corner.

2. Kōen _______ tori _______ imasu.
公園 _______ 鳥 _______ います。
There are birds in the park.

3. Heya _______ dare _______ imasu ka. Gakusei _______ imasu.
部屋 _______ だれ _______ いますか。学生 _______ います。
Who is in the room? A student is.

4. Sono hon'ya _______ doko _______ arimasu ka. Kanda _______ arimasu.
その本屋 _______ どこ _______ ありますか。神田 _______ あります。
Where is the bookstore? It's in Kanda.

5. Kaigishitsu _______ hito _______ imasu.
会議室 _______ 人 _______ います。
There are people in the conference room.

6. Asoko _______ nani _______ arimasu ka. Tsukue _______ arimasu.
あそこ _______ 何 _______ ありますか。机 _______ あります。
What are there over there? There are desks.

B. Review. Use any of the particles you have studied.

1. Tsukue ______ shita ______ nani ______ arimasu ka.
机 ______ 下 ______ 何 ______ ありますか。
What is under the desk?

2. Tanaka-san ______ doko ______ imasu ka. Nikai ______ heya ______ imasu.
田中さん ______ どこ ______ いますか。二階 ______ 部屋 ______ います。
Where is Mr. Tanaka? He is in the room on the second floor.

3. Kore ______ anata ______ jisho desu ka. Iie, Wada-san ______ desu.
これ ______ あなた ______ 辞書ですか。いいえ、和田さん ______ です。
Is this your dictionary? No, it's Mr. Wada's.

4. Ginkō ______ ano biru ______ ushiro ______ arimasu.
銀行 ______ あのビル ______ 後ろ ______ あります。
The bank is behind that building.

5. Kōen ______ ike ______ sakana ______ imasu.
公園 ______ 池 ______ 魚 ______ います。
There are fish in the pond in the park.

6. Yamada-san ______ kasa ______ dore desu ka.
山田さん ______ かさ ______ どれですか。
Which one is Miss Yamada's umbrella?

7. Kono hon ______ yasashii desu. Sono hon ______ muzukashii desu.
この本 ______ 易しいです。その本 ______ 難しいです。
This book is easy. That one is difficult.

8. Kono kata ______ watashi-tachi ______ Nihongo ______ sensei desu.
この方 ______ 私達 ______ 日本語 ______ 先生です。
This person (not that one) is our teacher of Japanese.

9. Oda-san ______ ashita ______ hatarakimasen.
小田さん ______ 明日 ______ 働きません。
As for Mr. Oda, he won't work tomorrow (but will next week).

10. Gakkō ______ mae ______ kōen ______ kodomo ______ imasu.
学校 ______ 前 ______ 公園 ______ 子供 ______ います。
There are children in the park in front of the school.

11. Eiga ______ zasshi ______ tsukue ______ ue ______ arimasen.

映画 ______ 雑誌 ______ 机 ______ 上 ______ ありません。

The movie magazine isn't on the desk (but somewhere else).

12. Hon'ya ______ migi ______ ginkō ______ aru. Hidari ______ hanaya ______ aru.

本屋 ______ 右 ______ 銀行 ______ ある。左 ______ 花屋 ______ ある。

There's a bank on the right of the bookstore. A flower shop is on the left.

7 に ni (2)

Indicates time and frequency.

Noun (time) + ni

Ichiji **ni** kite kudasai.

一時に来て下さい。

Please come at one o'clock.

Nanji **ni** okimasu ka.

何時に起きますか。

What time do you get up?

Getsuyōbi **ni** aimashō.

月曜日に会いましょう。

Let's meet on Monday.

Kotoshi no nigatsu **ni** kekkon shita.

今年の二月に結婚した。

I married in February of this year.

Natsu (**ni**) oyogimasu.

夏（に）泳ぎます。

We swim in the summer.

Note: Ni is optional with the four seasons. The following time expressions do not take ni, because they do not pinpoint the time:

asa	朝	morning
kyō	今日	today
kinō	昨日	yesterday
asu/ashita	明日	tomorrow
senshū	先週	last week
raigetsu	来月	next month
kyonen	去年	last year
ichijikan	一時間	one hour
itsu	いつ	when

Noun (duration) + ni + noun (frequency)

Isshukan **ni** nido oyogimasu.

一週間に二度泳ぎます。

I swim twice a week.

Kono mise wa ikkagetsu **ni** sando yasumimasu.

この店は一か月に三度休みます。

The store closes three times a month.

Noun (duration) + oki ni

Densha wa juppun oki **ni** demasu.

電車は十分おきに出ます。

The train leaves every ten minutes.

Kare wa ichinichi oki **ni** kuru.

彼は一日おきに来る。

He comes every other day.

Indicates direction.

e (1) へ

8

Noun (place) + e

Yamada-san wa Tōkyō **e** itta.

山田さんは東京へ行った。

Mrs. Yamada went to Tokyo.

Gakusei wa soto **e** demashita.

学生は外へ出ました。

The students went outside.

Kare wa doko **e** ikimasu ka.

彼はどこへ行きますか。

Where is he going?

Kyōto **e** iku basu wa niji ni deru.

京都へ行くバスは二時に出る。

The bus going to Kyoto leaves at two o'clock.

Double particles e no, e wa

Kore wa buchō **e no** tegami desu.

これは部長への手紙です。

This is a letter to the department head.

Ginkō e (wa) itta.
Yūbinkyoku **e wa** ikanakatta.

銀行へ（は）行った。郵便局へは行かなかった。

I went to the bank. I didn't go to the post office.

Indicates the direct object of a verb.

o (1) を

9

Noun (direct object) + o

Hachiji ni asagohan **o** tabemasu.

八時に朝ご飯を食べます。

I eat breakfast at eight o'clock.

Hara-san wa tegami **o** kaite imasu.

原さんは手紙を書いています。

Miss Hara is writing a letter.

Kinō nani **o** kaimashita ka.

昨日何を買いましたか。

What did you buy yesterday?

Noun (contrasted object / topic) + wa (not o)

Wain **wa** nomu. Sake **wa** nomanai.

ワインは飲む。酒は飲まない。

I drink wine. I don't drink sake.

Kanojo wa tenisu **wa** shimasu.

彼女はテニスはします。

She plays tennis (not golf).

Sono shinbun **wa** mō yomimashita.

その新聞はもう読みました。

As for that newspaper, I have read it.

Exercise 3 (7–9): Follow the instructions below.

A. Use ni or X (to indicate no particle is required).

1. Anata wa ashita ______ nanji ______ ikimasu ka.
あなたは明日 ______ 何時 ______ 行きますか。
What time are you going tomorrow?

2. Kanojo wa kyonen no natsu ______ kekkon shita.
彼女は去年の夏 ______ 結婚した。
She married in the summer of last year.

3. Oda-san wa itsu ______ kimasu ka. Raishū no getsuyōbi ______ kimasu.
小田さんはいつ ______ 来ますか。来週の月曜日 ______ 来ます。
When is Miss Oda coming? She's coming on Monday next week.

4. Kinō ______ ichijikan ______ hatarakimashita.
昨日 ______ 一時間 ______ 働きました。
Yesterday I worked one hour.

5. Asa ______ nanji ______ okimasu ka.
朝 ______ 何時 ______ 起きますか。
What time do you get up in the morning?

6. Isshūkan ______ nido ______ kanji no kuizu ga aru.
一週間 ______ 二度 ______ 漢字のクイズがある。
We have kanji quizzes twice a week.

7. Tomu wa natsu ______ ichinichi oki ______ oyogimasu.
トムは夏 ______ 一日おき ______ 泳ぎます。
Tom swims every other day in summer.

B. Review. Use any of the particles you have studied.

1. Yamada-san ______ doko ______ ikimashita ka.
山田さん ______ どこ ______ 行きましたか。
Where did Mr. Yamada go?

2. Ashita ______ Ginza ______ resutoran ______ ikimashō.
明日 ______ 銀座 ______ レストラン ______ 行きましょう。
Let's go to a restaurant in Ginza tomorrow.

3. Doyōbi ______ jisho ______ kaimashita.
土曜日 ______ 辞書 ______ 買いました。
I bought a dictionary on Saturday.

4. Nani ______ yonde imasu ka. Nihongo ______ shinbun ______ yonde imasu.
何 ______ 読んでいますか。日本語 ______ 新聞 ______ 読んでいます。
What are you reading? I'm reading a Japanese newspaper.

5. Sono tegami ______ kinō ______ kakimashita.
その手紙 ______ 昨日 ______ 書きました。
As for the letter, I wrote it yesterday.

6. Oda-san ______ tenisu ______ shimasu. Gorufu ______ shimasen.
小田さん ______ テニス ______ します。ゴルフ ______ しません。
Miss Oda plays tennis. She doesn't play golf.

7. Nanji ______ asagohan ______ tabemasu ka. Hachiji ______ tabemasu.
何時 ______ 朝ご飯 ______ 食べますか。八時 ______ 食べます。
What time do you eat breakfast? I eat at eight o'clock.

8. Gakkō ______ hon'ya ______ itta. Kanda ______ hon'ya ______ ikanakatta.
学校 ______ 本屋 ______ 行った。神田 ______ 本屋 ______ 行かなかった。
I did go to the school bookstore. Didn't go to the one in Kanda.

9. Shinjuku ______ iku basu ______ juppun oki ______ demasu.
新宿 ______ 行くバス ______ 十分おき ______ 出ます。
The bus going to Shinjuku leaves every ten minutes.

10. Tanaka-sensei ______ purezento ______ senshū ______ kaimashita.
田中先生 ______ プレゼント ______ 先週 ______ 買いました。
We bought the present to Prof. Tanaka last week.

10 と **to** (1)

Joins two or more nouns to indicate a complete list of items.

Noun + to + noun

Oda-san **to** Hara-san wa enginia desu.
小田さんと原さんはエンジニアです。
Mr. Oda and Mr. Hara are engineers.

Asoko ni isu **to** tēburu ga arimasu.
あそこにいすとテーブルがあります。
There are chairs and tables over there.

Tomu **to** Biru ga hanashite imasu.
トムとビルが話しています。
Tom and Bill are talking.

Ringo **to** orenji o kaimashita.
りんごとオレンジを買いました。
I bought apples and oranges.

Kinyōbi **to** doyōbi ni gorufu o shimasu.
金曜日と土曜日にゴルフをします。
I play golf on Friday and Saturday.

Kyō **to** ashita wa isogashii.
今日と明日は忙しい。
Today and tomorrow, I am busy.

11 や **ya** (1)

Joins two or more nouns to indicate a partial list of items.

Noun + ya + noun

Biru **ya** Jon ga tenisu o shite iru.
ビルやジョンがテニスをしている。
Bill, John (and others) are playing tennis.

Kare wa Doitsugo **ya** Furansugo o hanasu.
彼はドイツ語やフランス語を話す。
He speaks German, French (and other languages).

E **ya** chōkoku o mimashita.
絵や彫刻を見ました。
I saw paintings, sculptures (and the like).

Kyōto **ya** Nara e ikimashita.
京都や奈良へ行きました。
We went to Kyoto, Nara (and elsewhere).

Used with ya(1), indicates a partial list of items.

nado (1) など

Noun + ya + Noun + nado
(wa, ga, or o may be omitted)

Sara ya Jun **nado** (wa) oyogimashita.

サラやジュンなど（は）泳ぎました。

Sarah, June (and others) swam.

Toshokan ni hon ya zasshi **nado** (ga) aru.

図書館に本や雑誌など（が）ある。

There are books and magazines (among other things) in the library.

Chiri ya rekishi **nado** (o) benkyō shimasu.

地理や歴史など（を）勉強します。

I study geography, history (and so forth).

Double particle nado e

Depāto ya sūpā **nado e** itta.

デパートやスーパーなどへ行った。

I went to a department store, a supermarket (and other places).

Exercise 4 (10–12): Put appropriate particles or X (no particle) in the blanks.

1. Eiga ______ zasshi ______ shinbun ______ kaimashita.
映画 ______ 雑誌 ______ 新聞 ______ 買いました。
I bought a movie magazine and a newspaper.

2. Hako ______ naka ______ ringo ______ orenji ______ ga arimasu.
箱 ______ 中 ______ りんご ______ オレンジ ______ があります。
There are apples, oranges (among other things) in the box.

3. Buchō ______ Yamada-san wa kaigishitsu ______ imasu.
部長 ______ 山田さんは会議室 ______ います。
The department head and Mr. Yamada are in the conference room.

4. Tomu ______ Jimu wa kyonen no rokugatsu ______ Nihon ______ kimashita.
トム ______ ジムは去年の六月 ______ 日本 ______ 来ました。
Tom and Jim came to Japan in June last year.

5. Jimu wa isshūkan ______ nido ______ sushi ______ tenpura ______ tabemasu.

ジムは一週間 ______ 二度 ______ すし ______ てんぷら ______ 食べます。

Jim eats sushi, tempura and so forth twice a week.

6. Natsu ______ umi ______ yama ______ ikimasu.

夏 ______ 海 ______ 山 ______ 行きます。

In summer I go to the mountains, the sea, and so forth.

7. Rekishi ______ hon ______ Doitsugo ______ jisho ______ wa tsukue ______ ue ______ arimasu.

歴史 ______ 本 ______ ドイツ語 ______ 辞書 ______ は机 ______ 上 ______ あります。

The history books, German dictionaries, etc., are on the desk.

8. Watashi ______ kaisha ______ mae ______ resutoran ______ hanaya ga arimasu.

私 ______ 会社 ______ 前 ______ レストラン ______ 花屋があります。

There are a restaurant, a flower shop, etc., in front of my company.

9. Nihon ______ chiri ______ rekishi ______ benkyō shite imasu.

日本 ______ 地理 ______ 歴史 ______ 勉強しています。

I'm studying Japanese history and geography.

10. Doyōbi ______ nichiyōbi ______ toshokan ______ ikimasu.

土曜日 ______ 日曜日 ______ 図書館 ______ 行きます。

I go to the library on Saturday and Sunday.

11. Kyō ______ ashita ______ isogashii desu. Raishū ______ kite kudasai.

今日 ______ 明日 ______ 忙しいです。来週 ______ 来て下さい。

I'm busy today and tomorrow. Please come next week.

12. E ______ chōkoku ______ mimashita ka. E ______ mimashita. Chōkoku ______ mimasen deshita.

絵 ______ 彫刻 ______ 見ましたか。絵 ______ 見ました。彫刻 ______ 見ませんでした。

Did you see paintings and sculptures (among other things)? I did see paintings.
I didn't see sculptures.

13

mo (1) も

Refers to the noun immediately preceding, and means "too," "also," or "either."

Noun + mo (mo replaces wa, ga, o)

Chichi wa isha desu. Haha **mo** isha desu.

父は医者です。母も医者です。

My father is a doctor. My mother also is a doctor.

Eki no naka ni tokeiya ga aru. Yakkyoku **mo** aru.

駅の中に時計屋がある。薬局もある。

There is a watch shop in the station. A pharmacy, too.

Asoko ni otoko no hito ga iru. Onna no hito **mo** iru.

あそこに男の人がいる。女の人もいる。

There are men over there. Women, too.

Terebi o minai. Rajio **mo** kikanai.

テレビを見ない。ラジオも聞かない。

I don't watch TV. I don't listen to the radio, either.

Double particle e mo, ni mo

Yama e iku. Umi **e mo** iku.

山へ行く。海へも行く。

I go to the mountains. I go to the sea, too.

Hon wa koko ni wa nai. Asoko **ni mo** nai.

本はここにはない。あそこにもない。

The book isn't here. It isn't there, either.

Wada-san wa kyōshitsu ni wa imasen. Toshokan **ni mo** imasen.

和田さんは教室にはいません。図書館にもいません。

Miss Wada is not in the classroom. She isn't in the library, either.

14

mo (2) も

Used repeatedly meaning "both…and…" or "neither…nor…"

Noun + mo + noun + mo + positive v.

Tomu **mo** Biru **mo** Nihongo o hanasu.

トムもビルも日本語を話す。

Both Tom and Bill speak Japanese.

Mise ni wa takai mono **mo** yasui mono **mo** aru.

店には高い物も安い物もある。

In the store there are expensive things, and inexpensive things as well.

Noun/adj-ku + mo + noun/adj-ku + mo + negative verb

Kare wa tenisu **mo** gorufu **mo** shinai.

彼はテニスもゴルフもしない。

He plays neither tennis nor golf.

Kono heya wa hiroku **mo** semaku **mo** nai.

この部屋は広くも狭くもない。

This room is neither big nor small.

Double particles ni mo, e mo

Natsu **ni mo** fuyu **ni mo** yama e ikimasu.

夏にも冬にも山へ行きます。

I go to the mountains both in summer and winter.

Ginza **e mo** Ueno **e mo** ikanakatta.

銀座へも上野へも行かなかった。

I went neither to Ginza nor to Ueno.

15 に ni (3)

Indicates the indirect object of a verb.

Noun (indirect object) + ni

Watashi wa ane **ni** tegami o kaita.

私は姉に手紙を書いた。

I wrote a letter to my older sister.

Imōto wa Amerikajin **ni** Nihongo o oshiete iru.

妹はアメリカ人に日本語を教えている。

My younger sister is teaching Japanese to Americans.

Ato de tomodachi **ni** denwa shimasu.

後で友達に電話します。

I'll phone my friend later.

Double particles ni mo, ni wa

Sara **ni mo** kono shashin o misete kudasi.

サラにもこの写真を見せて下さい。

Show this photo to Sarah, too.

Tomu **ni** (wa) hanashita. Jimu **ni wa** hanasanakatta.

トムに（は）話した。ジムには話さなかった。

I told Tom. I didn't tell Jim.

Exercise 5 (13–15): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put to or mo in the blanks.

1. Ane ______ imōto ______ Tōkyō ni imasu.

   姉 ______ 妹 ______ 東京にいます。

   Both my older sister and younger sister are in Tokyo.

2. Tomu ______ Jimu wa Nihongo o benkyō shite imasu.

   トム ______ ジムは日本語を勉強しています。

   Tom and Jim are studying Japanese.

3. Wada-san wa wain ______ sake ______ nomimasen.

   和田さんはワイン ______ 酒 ______ 飲みません。

   Miss Wada drinks neither wine nor sake.

4. Hon ______ zasshi ______ shinbun o kaimashita.

   本 ______ 雑誌 ______ 新聞を買いました。

   I bought a book, a magazine, and newspapers.

5. Yamada-san ______ Wada-san ______ Tanaka-san ga kimashita.

   山田さん ______ 和田さん ______ 田中さんが来ました。

   Mr. Yamada, Miss Wada, and Mrs. Tanaka came.

6. Koko ni wa tokeiya ______ yakkyoku ______ arimasen.

   ここには時計屋 ______ 薬局 ______ ありません。

   There is neither a watch shop nor a pharmacy in here.

7. Sumisu-san wa Doitsugo ______ Furansugo ______ hanashimasu.

   スミスさんはドイツ語 ______ フランス語 ______ 話します。

   Mr. Smith speaks both German and French.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Watashi ______ tomodachi ______ gakkō ______ sensei desu.

   私 ______ 友達 ______ 学校 ______ 先生です。

   My friend is a schoolteacher, too.

2. Ano otoko ______ hito wa isha de wa nai. Ano onna ______ hito ______ isha de wa nai.

   あの男 ______ 人は医者ではない。あの女 ______ 人 ______ 医者ではない。

   That man isn't a doctor. That woman isn't a doctor, either.

3. Asoko ______ hanaya ______ arimasu. Eki ______ naka ______ arimasu.

   あそこ ______ 花屋 ______ あります。駅 ______ 中 ______ あります。

   There is a flower shop over there. In the station, too.

4. Sono tokeiya wa kono biru ______ naka ______ mae ______ arimasen.

   その時計屋はこのビル ______ 中 ______ 前 ______ ありません。

   The watch shop is neither in nor in front of this building.

5. Kyonen no hachigatsu ______ umi ______ itta. Yama ______ itta.

   去年の八月 ______ 海 ______ 行った。山 ______ 行った。

   We went to the sea in August last year. We went to the mountains too.

6. Kono resutoran ______ takaku ______ yasuku ______ nai.

   このレストラン ______ 高く ______ 安く ______ ない。

   This restaurant is neither expensive nor inexpensive.

7. Kinō Bosuton ______ tomodachi ______ tegami ______ kaita.

   昨日ボストン ______ 友達 ______ 手紙 ______ 書いた。

   I wrote a letter to my friend in Boston yesterday.

8. Sensei wa gakusei ______ shashin ______ misete imasu.

   先生は学生 ______ 写真 ______ 見せています。

   The teacher is showing some photos to his students.

9. Ane wa isshūkan ______ nido Amerikajin no kodomo ______ Nihongo ______ oshiemasu.

   姉は一週間 ______ 二度アメリカ人の子供 ______ 日本語 ______ 教えます。

   My older sister teaches Japanese to American children twice a week.

10. Oda-san ______ Yamada-san ______ denwa shimashita.

    小田さん ______ 山田さん ______ 電話しました。

    I phoned both Mr. Oda and Miss Yamada.

11. Sono koto ______ chichi ______ hanashita. Haha ______ hanasanakatta.

    その事 ______ 父 ______ 話した。母 ______ 話さなかった。

    As for that matter, I told my father. I didn't tell my mother.

Indicates the surface of something on which a certain action takes place.

ni (4) に

16

Noun + ni

Gakusei ga kokuban **ni** kanji o kaite imasu.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いています。

A student is writing kanji on the blackboard.

Kono kami **ni** anata no namae o kaite kudasai.

この紙にあなたの名前を書いて下さい。

Please write your name on this paper.

Kōto wa hangā **ni** kakete kudasai.

コートはハンガーにかけて下さい。

Please hang your coat on the hanger.

Double particles ni mo, ni wa

Ano kabe **ni mo** e ga hatte aru.

あの壁にも絵がはってある。

A picture is affixed to that wall, too.

Hako wa koko **ni** oite kudasai.Tsukue no ue **ni wa** okanaide kudasai.

箱はここに置いて下さい。机の上には置かないで下さい。

Please put the boxes here. Don't put them on the desk.

Indicates the location of an action.

de (1) で

17

Noun (location) + de + action verb.

Gakusei wa kōdō **de** kōgi o kiite imasu.

学生は講堂で講義を聞いています。

The students are listening to the lecture in the auditorium.

Neko ga tēburu no ue **de** asonde iru.

猫がテーブルの上で遊んでいる。

A cat is playing on the table.

Kono koppu wa supā **de/ni** utte imasu.

このコップはスーパーで・に売っています。

This cup is sold at the supermarket.

Note: In some cases, either de or ni can be used. When de is used, emphasis is put on the action, while when ni is used, emphasis is on the existence.

Noun (location) + de + aru (with an event)

Kōdō **de** eiga ga arimasu.

講堂で映画があります。

There will be a movie in the auditorium.

Kinō kōen **de** pikunikkku ga arimashita.

昨日公園でピクニックがありました。

There was a picnic in the park yesterday.

Double particles de mo, de wa

Tomu wa uchi **de mo** yoku benkyō shimasu.

トムはうちでもよく勉強します。

Tom studies hard at home, as well.

Kare wa bā **de wa** nomimasen.

彼はバーでは飲みません。

He doesn't drink at a bar (though he does at home).

18 と **to** (2)

Indicates a person with whom an action is performed. Often used with "issho ni" (together).

Noun + to

Watashi wa ani **to** tenisu o shita.

私は兄とテニスをした。

I played tennis with my older brother.

Kodomo **to** issho ni kōen e itta.

子供と一緒に公園へ行った。

I went to the park with children.

Ane wa Amerikajin **to** kekkon shita.

姉はアメリカ人と結婚した。

My older sister married an American.

Watashi wa otōto **to** kenka shita.

私は弟とけんかした。

I quarreled with my younger brother.

Double particles to no, to wa

Kare **to no** yakusoku o wasureta.

彼との約束を忘れた。

I forgot the promise I made to him.

Sensei **to no** kaiwa o tanoshinda.

先生との会話を楽しんだ。

I enjoyed the conversation with my teacher.

Kyō Jimu **to** atta. Biru **to wa** awanakatta.

今日ジムと会った。ビルとは会わなかった。

I met Jim today. I did not meet Bill.

Note: To and to wa may be replaced by ni and ni wa.

19

no (2) の

Indicates apposition.

Noun + no + noun

Ano hito wa shachō **no** Miki-san desu.

あの人は社長の三木さんです。

That person is Mr. Miki, president of the company.

Bengoshi **no** Hara-san ga matte imasu.

弁護士の原さんが待っています。

Mr. Hara, a lawyer, is waiting.

Otōto **no** Akira to dōbutsuen e itta.

弟の明と動物園へ行った。

I went to the zoo with Akira, my younger brother.

Tomodachi **no** Mishiko-san to tenisu o shita.

友達のみち子さんとテニスをした。

I play tennis with my friend Michiko.

Exercise 6 (16–19): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put ni or de in the blanks.

1. Toshokan ______ benkyō shimasu.

図書館 ______ 勉強します。

I study in the library.

2. Asoko ______ hon'ya ga arimasu. Asoko ______ matte ite kudasai.

あそこ ______ 本屋があります。あそこ ______ 待っていて下さい。

There is a bookstore over there. Please be waiting there.

3. Sono tsukue wa koko ______ oite kudasai.

その机はここ ______ 置いて下さい。

As for that desk, please put it here.

4. Kodomo ga soto ______ asonde imasu.

子供が外 ______ 遊んでいます。

Children are playing outside.

5. Kōdō ______ isu ga arimasu. Asoko ______ kōgi ga arimasu.

講堂 ______ いすがあります。あそこ ______ 講義があります。

There are chairs in the auditorium. We have lectures there.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks. Use X to indicate no particle is required.

1. Kyōshitsu ______ gakusei ______ imasu. Gakusei ______ kabe ______ e ______ hatte imasu.

教室 ______ 学生 ______ います。学生 ______ 壁 ______ 絵 ______ はっています。

There are students in the classroom. They are putting pictures on the wall.

2. Kanojo wa toshokan ______ hon ______ yomimasu. Densha ______ naka ______ yomimasu.

彼女は図書館 ______ 本 ______ 読みます。電車 ______ 中 ______ 読みます。

She reads books in the library. She reads on the train, too.

3. Kinō sensei ______ ichijikan ______ hanashita.

昨日先生 ______ 一時間 ______ 話した。

Yesterday I talked with my teacher for one hour.

4. Otōto ______ Akira ______ kōen ______ asonda.

弟 ______ 明 ______ 公園 ______ 遊んだ。

I played with my younger brother Akira in the park.

5. Watashi wa pūru ______ oyogimasu. Umi ______ oyogimasen.

私はプール ______ 泳ぎます。海 ______ 泳ぎません。

I swim in the swimming pool. I don't swim in the ocean.

6. Kare wa buchō ______ Tanaka-san ______ kaigishitsu ______ hanashite iru.

彼は部長 ______ 田中さん ______ 会議室 ______ 話している。

He is talking with Mr. Tanaka, the department head, in the conference room.

7. Tēburu ______ shita ______ hako ga aru. Hako ______ raberu ______ hatte aru.

テーブル ______ 下 ______ 箱がある。箱 ______ ラベル ______ はってある。

There is a box under the table. A label is affixed on the box.

8. Kinyōbi ______ bengoshi ______ Oda-san ______ yakusoku ga arimasu.

金曜日 ______ 弁護士 ______ 小田さん ______ 約束があります。

I have an appointment with Mr. Oda, my lawyer, on Friday.

9. Haiuē ______ jiko ______ atta. Ginkō ______ mae ______ atta.

ハイウエー ______ 事故 ______ あった。銀行 ______ 前 ______ あった。

There was an accident on the highway. There was one in front of the bank, too.

10. Dono hito ______ Nihongo ______ sensei ______ Wada-san desu ka.

どの人 ______ 日本語 ______ 先生 ______ 和田さんですか。

Which person is Mr. Wada, a teacher of Japanese?

kara (1) から 20

Indicates a starting point in time or place.

Noun (time/location) + kara

Kaisha wa kuji **kara** hajimaru.

会社は九時から始まる。

(Work at) the company begins at nine o'clock.

Ano fune wa gaikoku **kara** kita.

あの船は外国から来た。

That ship came from a foreign country.

Double particles kara no, kara mo

Kaisha **kara no** henji wa mada kimasen.

会社からの返事はまだ来ません。

The reply from the company has not come yet.

Kanada **kara mo** gakusei ga kuru.

カナダからも学生が来る。

Students come from Canada, too.

yori (1) より 21

Meaning as kara(1) above, but more formal, and often used in writing.

Noun (time) + yori

Kaigi wa niji **yori** okonawareru.

会議は二時より行なわれる。

The meeting will be held from two o'clock.

Tenrankai wa mikka **yori** kaisai sareru.

展覧会は三日より開催される。

The exhibition will be held from the third.

Noun (location) + yori

Kono michi **yori** mukō ga Kita-ku desu.

この道より向こうが北区です。

From this road on is Kita Ward.

Ōsaka-yuki wa niban hōmu **yori** hassha shimasu.

大阪行きは二番ホームより発車します。

The train bound for Osaka leaves from platform No. 2.

まで made (1)

Indicates a limit on time, space, or quantity.

Noun (time/space/quantity) + made

Yūbe jūji **made** benkyō shita.

昨夜十時まで勉強した。

I studied until ten last night.

Asa kara ban **made** piano o hiite iru.

朝から晩までピアノを弾いている。

She plays the piano from morning till night.

Ie kara gakkō **made** arukimasu.

家から学校まで歩きます。

I walk from my house to the school.

Kono kuruma wa gonin **made** noreru.

この車は五人まで乗れる。

This car can take up to five people.

Double particles made no, made ni

Meguro **made no** kippu o kaimashita.

目黒までの切符を買いました。

I bought a ticket to Meguro.

Yūshoku **made ni** kaerimasu.

夕食までに帰ります。

I'll return by supper.

Raisyū no suiyōbi **made ni** kite kudasai.

来週の水曜日までに来てください。

Please come before next Wednesday.

Exercise 7 (20–22): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kodomo-tachi ______ issho ni dōbutsuen ______ arukimashita.

子供達 ______ 一緒に動物園 ______ 歩きました。

I walked to the zoo with children.

2. Sono tegami ______ doko ______ kimashita ka.

その手紙 ______ どこ ______ 来ましたか。

Where did that letter come from?

3. Konsāto ______ suiyōbi ______ gogo rokuji ______ hajimaru.

コンサート ______ 水曜日 ______ 午後六時 ______ 始まる。

The concert begins at six p.m. on Wednesday.

4. Nihon ______ Furansu ______ Doitsu ______ gakusei ga kimasu.

日本 ______ フランス ______ ドイツ ______ 学生が来ます。

Students come to Japan from France, Germany (and other places as well).

5. Tōkyō-eki ______ Ōsaka ______ kippu ______ kaimashita.

東京駅 ______ 大阪 ______ 切符 ______ 買いました。

I bought a ticket to Osaka at Tokyo station.

6. Kore wa bengoshi ______ Wada-san ______ henji desu.

これは弁護士 ______ 和田さん ______ 返事です。

This is the reply from Mr. Wada, my lawyer.

7. Yūbe kuji ______ Tanaka-san ______ resutoran ______ hanashita.

昨夜九時 ______ 田中さん ______ レストラン ______ 話した。

I talked with Miss Tanaka until nine last night at the restaurant.

8. Kyōto-yuki wa rokuban hōmu ______ niji ______ hassha shimasu.

京都行きは六番ホーム ______ 二時 ______ 発車します。

The train bound for Kyoto leaves from platform No. 6 at two o'clock.

9. Tenrankai wa konshū ______ suiyōbi ______ raishū ______ kinyōbi ______ kaisai sareru.

展覧会は今週 ______ 水曜日 ______ 来週 ______ 金曜日 ______ 開催される。

The exhibition will be held from Wednesday of this week through Friday of next week.

10. Shachō wa raigetsu ______ mikka ______ Amerika ______ kaerimasu.

社長は来月 ______ 三日 ______ アメリカ ______ 帰ります。

The company president will return from America by the third of next month.

Indicates approximate amount (gurai is more colloquial).

kurai (1) くらい

Number + kurai/gurai

Shiken wa nijikan **kurai** kakatta.

試験は二時間くらいかかった。

The examination took about two hours.

Tomu wa kanji o hyaku **gurai** shitte imasu.

トムは漢字を百ぐらい知っています。

Tom knows about a hundred kanji.

Interrogative word + kurai/gurai

Dono **kurai** machimashita ka.

どのくらい待ちましたか。

About how long did you wait?

Ikura **gurai** haraimashita ka.

いくらぐらい払いましたか。

About how much did you pay?

24 ほど hodo (1)

Indicates an approximate amount (replaceable by kurai/gurai).

Number + hodo

Ringo ga muttsu **hodo** nokotte imasu.

りんごが六つほど残っています。

About six apples are left.

Kuruma ga godai **hodo** tomatte iru.

車が五台ほど止まっている。

About five cars are parked.

Nōto o gosatsu **hodo** katta.

ノートを五冊ほど買った。

I bought about five notebooks.

Ikkagetsu **hodo** ryokō shimasu.

一か月程ほど旅行します。

I'll travel about a month.

25 ばかり bakari (1)

Indicates an approximate amount (replaceable by kurai/gurai or hodo).

Number + bakari

Ie ga goken **bakari** tatte imasu.

家が五軒ばかり建っています。

About five houses are being built.

Mikka **bakari** hoteru ni tomatta.

三日ばかりホテルに泊まった。

I stayed at the hotel for about three days.

Kare wa yonen **bakari** mae ni Nihon ni sunde imashita.

彼は四年ばかり前に日本に住んでいました。

He lived in Japan about four years ago.

Indicates a means or materials. de (2) で

Noun + de

Fune **de** Hawai e ikimashita.

船でハワイへ行きました。

We went to Hawaii by boat.

Eigo **de** hanashite kudasai.

英語で話して下さい。

Please speak in English.

Hashi **de** tabemasu.

はしで食べます。

We eat with chopsticks.

Rajio **de** sono nyūsu o kiita.

ラジオでそのニュースを聞いた。

I heard the news on the radio.

Kami **de** ningyō o tsukurimasu.

紙で人形を作ります。

They make dolls with paper.

Double particles de mo, de wa

Basu **de** ikemasu. Densha **de mo** ikemasu.

バスで行けます。電車でも行けます。

You can go by bus. You can go by train, also.

Konna pen **de wa** kakenai.

こんなペンでは書けない。

I can't write with a pen like this.

Nihongo **de wa** hanasemasu. Chūbokugo **de wa** hanasemasen.

日本語では話せます。中国語では話せません。

I can speak in Japanese. I can't speak in Chinese.

Exercise 8 *(23–26)*: Put appropriate particles or X (no particle) in the blanks.

1. Kokuban ______ kanji ______ itsutsu ______ kaite arimasu.

黒板 ______ 漢字 ______ 五つ ______ 書いてあります。

About five kanji are written on the blackboard.

2. Heya ______ terebi ______ nijikan ______ mimashita.

部屋 ______ テレビ ______ 二時間 ______ 見ました。

I watched TV for about two hours in the room.

3. Kōdō ______ gakusei ______ jūnin ______ dete kimashita.

講堂 ______ 学生 ______ 十人 ______ 出てきました。

About ten students came out of the auditorium.

4. Biru ______ mae ______ kuruma ga nijūdai ______ tomatte iru.
ビル ______ 前 ______ 車が二十台 ______ 止まっている。
About twenty cars are parked in front of the building.

5. Hon ______ nisatsu ______ nōto ______ rokusatsu ______ kaimashita.
本 ______ 二冊 ______ ノート ______ 六冊 ______ 買いました。
I bought two books and about six notebooks.

6. Kanojo wa sannen ______ Amerikajin ______ Nihongo ______ oshieta.
彼女は三年 ______ アメリカ人 ______ 日本語 ______ 教えた。
She taught Japanese to Americans for about three years.

7. Ikkagetsu ______ nido ______ haha ______ denwa shimasu.
一か月 ______ 二度 ______ 母 ______ 電話します。
I phone my mother about twice a month.

8. Yūbe ______ terebi ______ nani ______ mimashita ka.
昨夜 ______ テレビ ______ 何 ______ 見ましたか。
What did you watch on TV last night?

9. Kodomo ga kami ______ hako ______ tsukutte imasu.
子供が紙 ______ 箱 ______ 作っています。
The children are making boxes with paper.

10. Tōkyō ______ Ōsaka ______ densha ______ sanjikan ______ kakaru.
東京 ______ 大阪 ______ 電車 ______ 三時間 ______ かかる。
From Tokyo to Osaka it takes about three hours by train.

11. Jimu wa fōku ______ naifu ______ tabemasu. Hashi ______ tabemasen.
ジムはフォーク ______ ナイフ ______ 食べます。はし ______ 食べません。
Jim eats with knife and fork. He doesn't eat with chopsticks.

12. Koko ______ Meguro ______ basu ______ dono ______ kakarimsu ka.
ここ ______ 目黒 ______ バス ______ どの ______ かかりますか。
How long does it take to get from here to Meguro by bus?

13. Rinda wa sensei ______ Nihongo ______ tegami ______ kakimashita.
リンダは先生 ______ 日本語 ______ 手紙 ______ 書きました。
Linda wrote a letter in Japanese to her teacher.

14. Buraun-san wa Eigo ______ supiichi ______ shita. Nihongo ______ shita.
ブラウンさんは英語 ______ スピーチ ______ した。日本語 ______ した。
Mr. Brown gave a speech in English. He made one in Japanese, too.

Indicates a choice or alternative.

ka (2) か 27

Noun + ka + Noun

Hara-san **ka** Miki-san ga kuru deshō.

原さんか三木さんが来るでしょう。

Either Mr. Hara or Mr. Miki will come.

Sētā **ka** jaketto o kaimasu.

セーターかジャケットを買います。

I'll buy either a sweater or a jacket.

Densha **ka** basu de ikimasu.

電車かバスで行きます。

I'll go either by train or bus.

Sentence + ka ... sentence + ka

Anata ga ikimasu **ka**. Yamada-san ga ikimasu **ka**.

あなたが行きますか、山田さんが行きますか。

Are you going, or is Miss Yamada going?

Tsuzukemashō **ka**. Sukoshi yasumi mashō **ka**

続けましょうか。少し休みましょうか。

Shall we continue? Or take a short break?

Indicates a point of departure.

o (2) を 28

Noun (place) + o

Maiasa kuji ni ie **o** demasu.

毎朝九時に家を出ます。

I leave my house at nine o'clock every morning.

Ueno-eki de densha **o** orimashita.

上野駅で電車を降りました。

I got off the train at Ueno Station.

Kare wa rainen daigaku **o** sotsugyō suru.

彼は来年大学を卒業する。

He'll graduate from college next year.

Chichi wa sengetsu seikai **o** intai shita.

父は先月政界を引退した。

My father retired from the political world last month.

29 を o (3)

Indicates a route of motion.

Noun (place/route) + o

Hiroi michi **o** arukimashita.
広い道を歩きました。
I walked along the wide road.

Kōen **o** tōrimashō ka.
公園を通りましょうか。
Shall we go through the park?

Hikōki ga sora **o** tonde iru.
飛行機が空を飛んでいる。
A plane is flying in the sky.

Ano kado **o** hidari e magatte kudasai.
あの角を左へ曲がって下さい。
Turn left at that corner.

Exercise 9 (27–29): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ano hito wa isha desu ______ , daigaku ______ sensei desu ______ .
あの人は医者です ______ 、大学 ______ 先生です ______ 。
Is he a doctor or a college professor?

2. Rokuji ______ Tanaka-san ______ issho ni kaisha ______ demashita.
六時 ______ 田中さん ______ 一緒に会社 ______ 出ました。
I left the company with Miss Tanaka at six o'clock.

3. Kono kabe ______ e ______ posutā ______ hatte kudasai.
この壁 ______ 絵 ______ ポスター ______ はって下さい。
Put a picture or a poster on this wall, please.

4. Asa ______ ban ______ hikōki ga sora ______ tonde imasu.
朝 ______ 晩 ______ 飛行機が空 ______ 飛んでいます。
From morning till night, airplanes are flying in the sky.

5. Sono koto ______ suiyōbi ______ mokuyōbi ______ hanashimashō.
その事 ______ 水曜日 ______ 木曜日 ______ 話しましょう。
Regarding the matter, let's talk either on Wednesday or Thursday.

6. Kodomo ga gonin ______ gakkō ______ mae ______ basu ______ orita.
子供が五人 ______ 学校 ______ 前 ______ バス ______ 降りた。
About five children got off the bus in front of the school.

7. Sono jiko ______ terebi ______ mimashita ka, shinbun ______ yomimashita ka.

その事故 ______ テレビ ______ 見ましたか、新聞 ______ 読みましたか。

Did you see the accident on TV, or did you read about it in a newspaper?

8. Takushii ______ ikimashō ka, kono michi ______ eki ______ arukimashō ka.

タクシー ______ 行きましょうか、この道 ______ 駅 ______ 歩きましょうか。

Shall we go by taxi, or shall we walk along this street to the station?

9. Ano kado ______ migi e magatte, ginkō ______ mae ______ tomete kudasi.

あの角 ______ 右へ曲がって、銀行 ______ 前 ______ 止めて下さい。

Turn right at that corner and stop in front of the bank.

10. Wada-san wa rainen ______ sangatsu ______ shigatsu ______ seikai ______ intai shimasu.

和田さんは来年 ______ 三月 ______ 四月 ______ 政界 ______ 引退します。

Mr. Wada will retire from the political world either in March or April of next year.

Indicates a point of arrival. ni (5) に 30

Noun (place) + ni

Densha ga eki **ni** tsukimashita.

電車が駅に着きました。

A train arrived at the station.

Watashi-tachi wa yūbe hoteru **ni** tsukimashita.

私たちは昨日ホテルに着きました。

We arrived at the hotel last night.

Fune wa itsu minato **ni** tsukimasu ka.

船はいつ港に着きますか。

When will the ship arrive at the port?

Hikōki wa dono gēto **ni** tsukimasu ka.

飛行機はどのゲートに着きますか。

Which gate does the plane arrive at?

31 に ni (6)

Indicates an entering motion.

Noun (place) + ni

Shinjuku de densha **ni** norimashita.

新宿で電車に乗りました。

I got on a train at Shinjuku.

Maiban o-furo **ni** hairimasu.

毎晩お風呂に入ります。

I take a bath (get into the bath) every night.

Kare wa tenisu kurabu **ni** haitte iru.

彼はテニスクラブに入っている。

He has joined the tennis club.

32 に ni (7)

Indicates purpose when used with a motion verb that expresses a movement from one place to another.

Noun (activity) + ni + motion verb

Ashita kaimono **ni** ikimasu.

明日買物に行きます。

I'll go shopping tomorrow.

Konban shokuji **ni** ikimashō.

今晩食事に行きましょう。

Let's go out for dinner tonight.

Ōzei no hito ga kenbutsu **ni** kita.

大勢の人が見物に来た。

Many people came for sightseeing.

V(-masu) + ni + motion verb

Ringo o kai **ni** mise ni haitta.

りんごを買いに店に入った。

I went into a store to buy apples.

Ginza e eiga o mi **ni** itta.

銀座へ映画を見に行った。

I went to Ginza to see a movie.

Nani o shi **ni** kimashita ka.

何をしに来ましたか。

Why did you come?

Exercise 10 (30–32): Follow the instructions below.

A. Translate the following phrases into Japanese.

1. to arrive at Kyoto at two o'clock
2. to arrive at Hong Kong by Monday
3. to get on a train at Ueno
4. to join the judo club
5. to go out for dinner
6. to come to play golf
7. to enter a store to buy a book

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Gogo sanji ______ yama ______ ue ______ hoteru ______ tsukimashita.
午後三時 ______ 山 ______ 上 ______ ホテル ______ 着きました。
We arrived at the hotel on the top of the mountain at three p.m.

2. Ano kado ______ Ueno-yuki ______ basu ______ notte kudasai.
あの角 ______ 上野行き ______ バス ______ 乗って下さい。
Please get on the bus for Ueno at that corner.

3. Tomodachi ______ umi ______ oyogi ______ ikimashita.
友達 ______ 海 ______ 泳ぎ ______ 行きました。
I went swimming to the sea with my friends.

4. Honkon ______ hikōki wa rokuji ______ goban gēto ______ tsukimasu.
香港 ______ 飛行機は六時 ______ 五番ゲート ______ 着きます。
The plane from Hong Kong will arrive at gate five at six o'clock.

5. Zasshi ______ kai ______ Ginza ______ mise ______ haitta.
雑誌 ______ 買い ______ 銀座 ______ 店 ______ 入った。
I entered a store in Ginza to buy a magazine.

6. Tomu ______ Jimu ______ jūdō kurabu ______ haitte imasu.
トム ______ ジム ______ 柔道クラブ ______ 入っています。
Both Tom and Jim are members of the judo club.

7. Kono tegami wa kinyōbi ______ mukō ______ tsukudeshō.
この手紙は金曜日 ______ 向こう ______ 着くでしょう。
This letter will probably arrive there by Friday.

8. Kare wa isshūkan ______ nido Shinjuku ______ eiga ______ mi ______ iku.
彼は一週間 ______ 二度新宿 ______ 映画 ______ 見 ______ 行く。
He goes to Shinjuku to see a movie twice a week.

9. Ōzei no hito ga gaikoku ______ Nihon ______ kenbutsu ______ kuru.
大勢の人が外国 ______ 日本 ______ 見物 ______ 来る。
Many people come to Japan from foreign countries for sightseeing.

10. Densha ______ orite, eki ______ resutoran ______ haitta.
電車 ______ 降りて、駅 ______ レストラン ______ 入った。
I got off the train and entered a restaurant in the station.

33 と to (3)

Indicates a quotation or what someone thinks or hears.

Quotation (direct/indirect) + to

Jimu ga "Ohayō," **to** iimashita.
ジムが「お早よう。」と言いました。
Jim said, "Good morning."

Kare wa "Kore was nan desu ka," **to** kikimashita.
彼は「これは何ですか。」と聞きました。
He asked, "What is this ?"

Tomu wa ato de kuru **to** itta.
トムは後で来ると言った。
Tom said that he would come later.

Sentence + to + omou/kiku

Tsuri ni ikō **to** omoimasu.
釣りに行こうと思います。
I think I'll go fishing.

Watashi wa Tomu wa konai **to** omotta.
私はトムは来ないと思った。
I thought that Tom wouldn't come

Biru ga nyūin shita **to** kiita.
ビルが入院したと聞いた。
I heard that Bill had been hospitalized.

to (4) と 34

In the form "to iu," indicates the name of something.

Noun + to iu + noun

Miki **to** iu hito ga kimashita.
三木という人が来ました。
A person called Miki came.

Yamato **to** iu ryokan ni tomatta.
大和という旅館に泊まった。
I stayed at an inn called Yamato.

Arita **to** iu machi e itta.
有田という町へ行った。
I went to a town called Arita.

Sore wa nan **to** iu shōsetsu desu ka.
それは何という小説ですか。
What is that novel called?

to ka (1) とか 35

Double particles used to express "something like" or "something to the effect."

Noun + to ka

Hiru **to ka** iu Amerikajin ni atta.
ヒルとかいうアメリカ人に会った。
I met an American named something like Hill.

Sentence + to ka

Rinda ga kekkon suru **to ka** kiita.
リンダが結婚するとか聞いた。
I heard something to the effect that Linda is getting married.

Exercise 11 (33–35): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kanojo wa goji ______ kaisha ______ iru ______ iimashita.
彼女は五時 ______ 会社 ______ いる ______ 言いました。
She said that she would be at her company until five o'clock.

2. Kinyōbi ______ tomodachi ______ kaimono ______ ikō ______ omoimasu.
金曜日 ______ 友達 ______ 買物 ______ 行こう ______ 思います。
I think I'll go shopping with my friend on Friday.

3. Pātī ______ Hirota ______ iu hito ______ nomimashita.
パーティー ______ 広田 ______ いう人 ______ 飲みました。
I drank with a person called Hirota at the party.

4. Kare wa basu ______ densha ______ kaeru ______ itte imashita.

彼はバス ______ 電車 ______ 帰る ______ 言っていました。

He said that he would return either by bus or by train.

5. Yamada ______ iu hito ______ anata ni ai ______ kimashita.

山田 ______ いう人 ______ あなたに会い ______ 来ました。

A person called Yamada came to see you.

6. Sumisu-san wa niji ______ Narita ______ tsuku ______ omoimasu.

スミスさんは二時 ______ 成田 ______ 着く ______ 思います。

I think that Mr. Smith will arrive at Narita at two o'clock.

7. Tomu ______ Biru ______ tenrankai ______ ikanakatta ______ kikimashita.

トム ______ ビル ______ 展覧会 ______ 行かなかった ______ 聞きました。

I heard something to the effect that neither Tom nor Bill went to the exhibition.

8. Yūbe jūji ______ "Gaijin" ______ iu shōsetsu ______ yomimshita.

昨夜十時 ______ 「外人」 ______ いう小説 ______ 読みました。

I read a novel called "Foreigner" until ten o'clock last night.

9. Kare wa doyōbi ______ buchō ______ tsuri ______ iku ______ itte iru.

彼は土曜日 ______ 部長 ______ 釣り ______ 行く ______ 言っている。

He says something to the effect that he'll go fishing with the department head on Saturday.

10 Watashi-tachi wa Yagi ______ iu eki ______ densha ______ orite, soko ______ basu ______ ryokan ______ itta.

私達は八木 ______ いう駅 ______ 電車 ______ 降りて、そこ ______ バス ______ 旅館 ______ 行った。

We got off the train at a station called something like Yagi, and from there went to the inn by bus.

Indicates a limit or scope.

de (3) で

36

Noun + de

Tomu wa kurasu **de** ichiban ii gakusei desu.

トムはクラスで一番いい学生です。

Tom is the best student in the class.

Nihon **de** ichiban nagai hashi o watarimashita.

日本で一番長い橋を渡りました。

We crossed the longest bridge in Japan.

Noun + no naka + de

Sensei no naka **de** Wada-sensei ga ichiban wakai.

先生の中で和田先生が一番若い。

Mr. Wada is the youngest among the teachers.

Kono mittsu no naka **de** kore ga ichiban kirei da.

この三つの中でこれが一番きれいだ。

This is the prettiest among these three.

Indicates a comparison.

to (5) と

37

Noun + to + noun + to

Kono tokei **to** sono tokei **to**, dochira ga takai desu ka.

この時計とその時計と、どちらが高いですか。

Which one is more expensive, this watch or that one?

Nihon ryōri **to** Chūgoku ryōri **to**, dochira o tabemashō ka.

日本料理と中国料理と、どちらを食べましょうか。

Which shall we eat, Japanese food or Chinese food?

Kono kaban **to** sono kaban **to**, nedan ga chigaimasu.

このかばんとそのかばんと、値段が違います。

This briefcase and that one have different prices.

38 より yori (2)

Indicates a comparison.

Noun + yori

Kore wa sore **yori** karui desu.

これはそれより軽いです。

This is lighter than that.

Kono ie wa ano ie **yori** ōkii desu.

この家はあの家より大きいです。

This house is bigger than that one.

Kono mise wa depāto **yori** yasui.

この店はデパートより安いです。

This store is cheaper than a department store.

V-u + yori

Hikōki de iku hō ga fune de iku **yori** anzen desu.

飛行機で行く方が船で行くより安全です

Going by airplane is safer than going by boat.

Terebi o miru **yori** hon o yomitai.

テレビを見るより本を読みたい。

I'd rather read a book than watch TV.

Atarashii kuruma o kau **yori** shikata ga arimasen.

新しい車を買うより仕方がありません。

There's no other way than to buy a new car.

Exercise 12 (36–38): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono kurasu ______ ichiban wakai gakusei ______ dare desu ka.

このクラス ______ 一番若い学生 ______ だれですか。

Who is the youngest student in this class?

2. Kare ______ ofisu wa machi ______ ichiban atarashii biru ______ aru.

彼 ______ オフィスは町 ______ 一番新しいビル ______ ある。

His office is in the newest building in the city.

3. Kono kaban ______ naka ______ dore ______ ichiban karui desu ka.

このかばん ______ 中 ______ どれ ______ 一番軽いですか。

Which is the lightest among these briefcases?

4. Kono jaketto ______ ano jaketto ______ , saizu ______ chigaimasu.

このジャケット ______ あのジャケット ______ 、サイズが違います。

This jacket and that jacket are of different sizes.

5. Densha ______ basu ______ , dochira ______ ikimashō ka.

電車 ______ バス ______ 、どちら ______ 行きましょうか。

By which shall we go, a train or bus?

6. Hiragana ______ kanji ______ yasashii desu.

ひらがな ______ 漢字 ______ 易しいです。

Hiragana is easier than kanji.

7. Kare ______ tegami ______ kaku ______ shikata ga arimasen.

彼 ______ 手紙 ______ 書く ______ 仕方がありません。

There is no other way than to write a letter to him.

8. Watashi wa gorufu ______ suru ______ konsāto ______ ikitai desu.

私はゴルフ ______ する ______ コンサート ______ 行きたいです。

I'd rather go to a concert than play golf.

9. Pūru ______ oyogu hō ga umi ______ oyogu ______ anzen desu.

プール ______ 泳ぐ方が海 ______ 泳ぐ ______ 安全です。

Swimming in the pool is safer than swimming in the sea.

10 Fune ______ iku ______ kuruma ______ hashi ______ wataritai desu.

船 ______ 行く ______ 車 ______ 橋 ______ 渡りたいです。

I'd rather cross the bridge by car than go by boat.

Used with an interrogative word, indicates the superlative.

yori (3) より

39

Interrogative + yori (mo)

Kono kōen wa doko **yori** (mo) shizuka desu.

この公園はどこより（も）静かです。

This park is quieter than anywhere else.

Sara wa dare **yori** (mo) kanji o takusen shitte iru.

サラはだれより（も）漢字を沢山知っている。

Sarah knows more kanji than anyone else.

Kono naka de, kono kaban ga dore **yori** (mo) ōkii desu.

この中でこのかばんがどれより（も）大きいです。

Among these, this briefcase is bigger than the others.

Nani **yori** (mo) ryokō shitai.

何より（も）旅行したい。

I'd like to travel more than anything else.

40 くらい kurai (2)

Indicates a comparison in a positive sentence (gurai is more colloquial).

Noun + kurai/gurai + positive verb

Sono niwa wa gorufujō **kurai** ōkii.

その庭はゴルフ場くらい大きい。

The garden is as big as a golf course.

Kyō no shiken wa kinō no shiken **gurai** muzukashikatta.

今日の試験は昨日の試験ぐらい難しかった。

Today's examination was as difficult as yesterday's.

Kono ko wa otona **kurai** yoku tabemasu.

この子は大人くらいよく食べます。

This child eats as much as an adult.

Kono e wa ano e **gurai** kirei da.

この絵はあの絵ぐらいきれいだ。

This picture is as pretty as that one.

41 ほど hodo (2)

Indicates a comparison in a negative sentence.

Noun + hodo + negative verb

Tomu **hodo** ii gakusei wa imasen.

トムほどいい学生はいません。

There is no student as good as Tom.

Neko wa inu **hodo** hayaku hashirenai.

猫は犬ほど速く走れない。

A cat can't run as fast as a dog.

Kono heya wa toshokan **hodo** shizuka de wa arimasen.

この部屋は図書館ほど静かではありません。

This room is not as quiet as the library.

Exercise 13 (39–41): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Hara-san wa kono kaisha ______ dare ______ wakai desu.
原さんはこの会社 ______ だれ ______ 若いです。
Miss Hara is younger than anyone else in this company.

2. Kono mise ______ ryōri wa doko ______ yasui desu.
この店 ______ 料理はどこ ______ 安いです。
The food at this restaurant is cheaper than anywhere else.

3. Kono naka ______ kore ______ dore ______ kirei desu.
この中 ______ これ ______ どれ ______ きれいです。
Among these this one is prettier than any others.

4. Watashi wa nani ______ opera ______ mi ______ ikitai.
私は何 ______ オペラ ______ 見 ______ 行きたい。
I'd like to go to see the opera more than anything else.

5. Kaimono ______ doyōbi ______ itsu ______ ii desu.
買物 ______ 土曜日 ______ いつ ______ いいです。
As for shopping, Saturday is better than any other days.

B. Put kurai/gurai or hodo in the blanks.

1. Ano yama wa Fujisan ______ takai desu.
あの山は富士山 ______ 高いです。
That mountain is as high as Mt. Fuji.

2. Kinō no kuizu wa shiken ______ nagakatta.
昨日のクイズは試験 ______ 長かった。
Yesterday's quiz was as long as an examination.

3. Kono sakana wa sono sakana ______ atarashiku arimasen.
この魚はその魚 ______ 新しくありません。
This fish is not as fresh as that one.

4. Gakusei no naka de Tomu ______ ii gakusei wa imasen.

学生の中でトム ______ いい学生はいません。

Among the students, none are as good as Tom.

5. Taigā wa kuruma ______ hayaku hashiremasu.

タイガーは車 ______ 速く走れます。

A tiger can run as fast as a car.

6. Kono michi wa mukō no hiroi michi ______ anzen de wa nai.

この道は向こうの広い道 ______ 安全ではない。

This road is not as safe as the wide road over there.

7. Kono rekishi no hon wa shōsetsu ______ omoshiroi desu.

この歴史の本は小説 ______ 面白いです。

This history book is as interesting as a novel.

8. Kyō no kōgi wa kinō no kōgi ______ omoshirokunakatta.

今日の講義は昨日の講義 ______ 面白くなかった。

Today's lecture wasn't as interesting as yesterday's.

9. Buraun-san wa Nihonjin ______ kanji o takusan shitte iru.

ブラウンさんは日本人 ______ 漢字を沢山知っている。

Miss Brown knows as many kanji as a Japanese does.

10. Sensei no heya wa kyōshitsu ______ hiroku arimasen.

先生の部屋は教室 ______ 広くありません。

The teachers' room isn't as large as a classroom.

42 か ka (3)

Used with an interrogative word to mean "something," "someone," "someday," "somewhere," etc.

Interrogative + ka

Tsukue no ue ni nani **ka** arimasu.

机の上に何かあります。

There is something on the desk.

Nani **ka** tsumetai nomimono o kudasai.

何か冷たい飲み物を下さい。

Please give me something cold to drink.

Dare **ka** kimashita.

だれか来ました。

Someone came.

Itsu **ka** Pari e ikitai.

いつかパリへ行きたい。

Someday I want to go to Paris.

Double particles ka e, ka to

Kare wa doko **ka e** dekaketa.

彼はどこかへ出かけた。

He went out somewhere.

Kanojo wa dare **ka to** hanashite imasu.

彼女はだれかと話しています。

She is talking with someone.

mo (3) も 43

Used with an interrogative word to mean "nothing," "nobody," "nowhere," etc.

Interrogative + mo + negative verb

Soko ni wa nani **mo** arimasen.

そこには何もありません。

There is nothing there.

Dare **mo** kare no jūsho o shiranai.

だれも彼の住所を知らない。

Nobody knows his address.

Double particles e mo, to mo

Yūbe doko **e mo** ikanakatta.

昨夜どこへも行かなかった。

I went nowhere last night.

Kare wa dare **to mo** hanasanakatta.

彼はだれとも話さなかった。

He talked with nobody.

ni (8) に 44

Used with verbs naru, suru and others to indicate a change or choice.

Noun + ni + naru

Kare wa pairotto **ni** narimasu.

彼はパイロットになります。

He will become a pilot.

Kanojo wa byōki **ni** narimashita.

彼女は病気になりました。

She became ill.

Kono heya wa shosai **ni** natte iru.

この部屋は書斎になっている。

This room has been made into a study.

Noun + ni + suru

"Nani **ni** shimasu ka."
"Sushi **ni** shimasu."

「何にしますか。」

「すしにします。」

"What will you have?"
"I'll have sushi."

Kaigi wa kayōbi **ni** shimashō.

会議は火曜日にしましょう。

Let's have the meeting on Tuesday.

Exercise 14 (42–44): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Dare ______ Oda-san ______ jūsho ______ shitte imasu ka.

だれ ______ 小田さん ______ 住所 ______ 知っていますか。

Does anyone know Miss Oda's address?

2. Itsu ______ chichi ______ tsuri ______ ikitai ______ omoimasu.

いつ ______ 父 ______ 釣り ______ 行きたい ______ 思います。

I'd like to go fishing with my father someday.

3. Ano mise ______ nani ______ tsumetai nomimono ______ kaimashō.

あの店 ______ なに ______ 冷たい飲み物 ______ 買いましょう。

Let's buy something cold to drink at that store.

4. Yamada-san wa dare ______ doko ______ dekakemashita.

山田さんはだれ ______ どこ ______ 出かけました。

Mr. Yamada went out somewhere with someone.

5. "Kyōshitsu ______ dare ______ imasu ka." "Iie, dare ______ imasen."

「教室 ______ だれ ______ いますか。」「いいえ、だれ ______ いません。」

"Is there anyone in the classroom?" "No, there's nobody."

6. "Yūbe doko ______ ikimashita ka." "Iie, doko ______ ikimasen deshita.
Uchi ______ terebi ______ mite imashita."

「昨夜どこ ______ 行きましたか。」「いいえ、どこ ______ 行きませんでした。
うち ______ テレビ ______ 見ていました。」

"Did you go somewhere last night?" "No, I didn't. I was watching TV at home."

7. Kare wa daigaku ______ sotsugyō shite enginia ______ narimasu.

彼は大学 ______ 卒業してエンジニア ______ なります。

He will graduate from college and become an engineer.

8. "Kono kōto ______ sono kōto ______ , dochira ______ shimasu ka."
"Kochira ______ shimasu."

「このコート ______ そのコート ______ 、どちら ______ しますか。」
「こちら ______ します。」

"Which one will you take, this coat or that one?" "I'll take this one."

9. Kenbutsu ______ nichiyōbi ______ gogo ______ shimashō.

見物 ______ 日曜日 ______ 午後 ______ しましょう。

As for the sightseeing, let's make it on Sunday afternoon.

10. Nomimono ______ biiru ______ wain ______ shimasu.

飲み物 ______ ビール ______ ワイン ______ します。

For a drink, I'd rather have wine than beer.

o (4) を 45

Followed by the verb suru, indicates an occupation or position.

Noun + o + suru

Chichi wa isha **o** shite imasu.

父は医者をしています。

My father is a doctor.

Oda-san no o-tōsan wa daigaku no gakuchō **o** shite ita.

小田さんのお父さんは大学の学長をしていた。

Mr. Oda's father was the president of a university.

demo (1) でも 46

Indicates emphasis.

Noun + demo

Sonna koto wa kodomo **demo** dekimasu.

そんな事は子供でも出来ます。

Even a child can do such a thing.

Konna muzukashii kanji wa sensei **demo** shiranai.

こんな難しい漢字は先生でも知らない。

Even a teacher doesn't know such a difficult kanji.

Kare wa nichiyōbi **demo** shigoto ni ikimasu.

彼は日曜日でも仕事に行きます。

He goes to work even on Sundays.

Double particles made demo, to demo.

Kare wa hokkyoku **made demo** iku deshō.

彼は北極まででも行くでしょう。

He would go even to the North Pole.

Kanojo wa shiranai hito **to demo** hanashimasu.

彼女は知らない人とでも話します。

She talks even with strangers.

47 でも **demo** (2)

Used with an interrogative word for positive emphasis to mean "anything," "anyone," "any time," "anywhere," etc.

Interrogative + demo

Kono inu wa nan **demo** tabemasu.

この犬は何でも食べます。

This dog eats anything.

Kono kigu wa dare **demo** tsukaeru.

この器具はだれでも使える。

Anyone can handle this utensil.

Itsu **demo** kite kudasai.

いつでも来て下さい。

Please come any time.

Double particles to demo, kara demo

Kare wa dare **to demo** nomimasu.

彼はだれとでも飲みます。

He drinks with anyone.

Tori wa doko **kara demo** kuru.

鳥はどこからでも来る。

Birds can come from anywhere.

Exercise 15 (45–47): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Yamada-san ______ otōto-san wa hoteru ______ manējā ______ shite imasu.

山田さん ______ 弟さんはホテル ______ マネージャー ______ しています。

Mr. Yamada's younger brother is a hotel manager.

2. Kanojo wa sangatsu ______ Shinjuku ______ resutoran ______ uētoresu ______ shite ita.

彼女は三月 ______ 新宿 ______ レストラン ______ ウエートレス ______ していた。

She was a waitress at a restaurant in Shinjuku until March.

3. Watashi no bōifurendo ______ Tomu wa Tōkyō ______ Eigo ______ sensei ______ shite iru.

私のボーイフレンド ______ トムは東京 ______ 英語 ______ 先生 ______ している。

My boyfriend Tom is an English teacher in Tokyo.

4. Kono kigu ______ dare ______ tsukaemasu. Kodomo ______ tsukaemasu.

この器具 ______ だれ ______ 使えます。子供 ______ 使えます。

Anyone can handle this utensil. Even a child can.

5. Otōto ______ Masao wa yasashii shigoto ______ shimasen.
弟 ______ 正夫は易しい仕事 ______ しません。
My younger brother Masao doesn't even do easy work.

6. Shachō ______ ie ______ kore ______ ōkiku arimasen.
社長 ______ 家 ______ これ ______ 大きくありません。
Even the company president's house isn't as large as this.

7. Sumisu-san wa Amerikajin ______ Nihongo ______ hanshimasu.
スミスさんはアメリカ人 ______ 日本語 ______ 話します。
Mr. Smith speaks in Japanese even with Americans.

8. Kare wa dare ______ tsuri ______ ikimasu.
彼はだれ ______ 釣り ______ 行きます。
He goes fishing with anyone.

9. Wada-san wa shashin ______ tori ______ Himalaya ______ ikudeshō.
和田さんは写真 ______ とり ______ ヒマラヤ ______ 行くでしょう。
Mr. Wada would go even to the Himalaya Mountains to take pictures.

10. Konpyūtā ______ koto ______ Miki-san ga nan ______ shitte imasu.
コンピューター ______ 事 ______ 三木さんが何 ______ 知っています。
As for computers, Miss Miki knows everything.

11. "Nanyōbi ______ eiga ______ ikimashō ka." "Itsu ______ ii desu."
「何曜日 ______ 映画 ______ 行きましょうか。」「いつ ______ いいです。」
"What day shall we go to the movie?" "Any day will be fine."

12. Gakusei wa doko ______ kimasu. Afurika ______ kimasu.
学生はどこ ______ 来ます。アフリカ ______ 来ます。
The students come from everywhere. They come even from Africa.

48 で **de** (4)

Indicates a cause or reason.

Noun + de

Byōki **de** shigoto ni ikemasen.

病気で仕事に行けません。

I can't go to work due to illness.

Kōtsū jiko **de** ōzei no hito ga shinimashita.

交通事故で大勢の人が死にました。

Many people died due to a traffic accident.

Kaji **de** ie ga yakemashita.

火事で家が焼けました。

The house burned down due to a fire.

Tsuyoi kaze **de** ki ga taoreta.

強い風で木が倒れた。

Trees fell down due to strong wind.

49 から **kara** (2)

Indicates source (a giver, cause, or material).

Noun + kara

Watashi wa Oda-san **kara** jishin no nyūsu o kiita.

私は小田さんから地震のニュースを聞いた。

I heard the news about the earthquake from Mr. Oda.

Kare wa seifu **kara** hojokin o moratta.

彼は政府から補助金をもらった。

He received a grant from the government.

Kanojo wa tsukare **kara** byōki ni natta.

彼女は疲れから病気になった。

She became ill from fatigue.

Wain wa budō **kara** tsukuru.

ワインはぶどうから作る。

Wine is made from grapes.

Note: As in the following example, de also indicates material.

Kami **de** ningyō o tsukutta.

紙で人形を作った。

I made a doll with paper.

De is used with materials that retain their original states, whereas kara is used when a chemical change takes place in the process.

ni (9) に

Noun (person) + ni + noun (thing) + o + morau / narau

Chichi **ni** kamera o moraimashita.

父にカメラをもらいました。

I received a camera from my father.

Sensei **ni** kanji o naraimashita.

先生に漢字を習いました。

We learned kanji from the teacher.

Note: When a giver is an impersonal institution, kara must be used rather than ni.

Seifu **kara** hojokin o moratta.

政府から補助金をもらった。

I received a grant from the government.

Noun (person) + ni + V-te + morau

Hara-san **ni** yūbinkyoku e itte moratta.

原さんに郵便局へ行ってもらった。

I had Miss Hara go to the post office for me.

Kanojo **ni** kitte o katte moratta.

彼女に切手を買ってもらった。

I had her buy some stamps for me.

Kare **ni** rajio o naoshite morau.

彼にラジオを直してもらう。

I'll have him fix the radio for me.

Exercise 16 (48–50): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put de, ni, or kara in the blanks.

1. Shigoto ______ gorufu ni ikemasen deshita.

仕事 ______ ゴルフに行けませんでした。

I couldn't go golfing due to my work.

2. Tomodachi ______ kono e o moratta.

友達 ______ この絵をもらった。

I received this picture from my friend.

3. Tanaka-sensei ______ kanji o naraimasu.

田中先生 ______ 漢字を習います。

We learn kanji from Professor Tanaka.

4. Jiko ______ hito ga shinimashita.

事故 ______ 人が死にました。

People died because of the accident.

5. Kare wa daigaku ______ sukarāshippu o moratta.

彼は大学 ______ スカラーシップをもらった。

He received a scholarship from the university.

6. Kodomo ga kami ______ hikōki o tsukutte imasu.

子供が紙 ______ 飛行機を作っています。

The child is making airplanes with paper.

7. Wain wa budō ______ tsukurimasu.

ワインはぶどう ______ 作ります。

Wine is made from grapes.

8. Hara-san ______ konsāto no kippu o katte moratta.

原さん ______ コンサートの切符を買ってもらった。

I had Miss Hara buy a concert ticket for me.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Oda-san wa byōki ______ sengetsu ______ mikka ______ nyūin shita.

小田さんは病気 ______ 先月 ______ 三日 ______ 入院した。

Mr. Oda was hospitalized on the third of last month due to illness.

2. Yūbe ______ kaze ______ kōen ______ ki ga taoremashita.

昨夜 ______ 風 ______ 公園 ______ 木が倒れました。

Trees in the park fell down because of the wind last night.

3. Watashi ______ Haruko-san ______ Biru ______ tenisu ______ naraimashita.

私 ______ 春子さん ______ ビル ______ テニス ______ 習いました。

Both Haruko and I learned tennis from Bill.

4. Densha ______ jiko ______ hito ga sannin shinda ______ kikimashita.

電車 ______ 事故 ______ 人が三人死んだ ______ 聞きました。

I heard something to the effect that three people died because of the train crash.

5. Ginza ______ kaji ______ "Hirota" ______ iu mise ga yakemashita.

銀座 ______ 火事 ______ 「広田」 ______ いう店が焼けました。

A store called "Hirota" burned down due to the fire in Ginza.

6. Watashi wa haha ______ ikkagetsu ______ ichido tegami ______ moraimasu.
私は母 ______ 一か月 ______ 一度手紙 ______ もらいます。
I receive a letter from my mother once a month.

7. Jimu wa sensei ______ Nihongo ______ shinbun ______ yonde moratta.
ジムは先生 ______ 日本語 ______ 新聞 ______ 読んでもらった。
Jim had his teacher read a Japanese newspaper for him.

8. Watashi wa Haruko-san ______ kitte ______ kai ______ yūbinkyoku ______ itte moratta.
私は春子さん ______ 切手 ______ 買い ______ 郵便局 ______ 行ってもらった。
I had Haruko go to the post office to buy stamps for me.

ga (2) が

51

In the construction "wa...ga," indicates the subject or the object of certain verbs and adjectives.

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (subject) + ga

Zō wa hana **ga** nagai desu.
象は鼻が長いです。
Elephants have long trunks. (As for elephants, their trunks are long.)

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga + verb of ability/necessity

Jimu wa Nihongo **ga** hanasemasu.
ジムは日本語が話せます。
Jim can speak Japanese.

Akira wa unten **ga** dekimasu.
明は運転ができます。
Akira can drive (a car).

Gakusei wa ii jisho **ga** irimasu.
学生はいい辞書が要ります。
Students need good dictionaries.

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga + verb of sensation

(Watashi wa) ongaku **ga** kikoemasu.
（私は）音楽が聞こえます。
(I) can hear the music. (The music can be heard.)

(Watashi wa) yama **ga** miemasu.
（私は）山が見えます。
(I) can see the mountain.

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga + adjectival noun

Kanojo wa piano **ga** jōzu desu.
彼女はピアノが上手です。
She is good at piano.

Kare wa supōtsu **ga** suki desu.
彼はスポーツが好きです。
He likes sports.

Noun (topic) + wa + noun (object) + ga + adj. of emotion/desire

Watashi wa kare no shinsetsu **ga** ureshii.

私は彼の親切がうれしい。

I'm pleased by his kindness.

Watashi wa haha no shi **ga** kanashii.

私は母の死が悲しい。

I'm saddened by my mother's death.

Watashi wa ii kamera **ga** hoshii.

私はいいカメラが欲しい。

I want a good camera.

Watashi wa tenpura **ga/o** tabetai.

私はてんぷらが・を食べたい。

I want to eat tempura.

52 が **ga** (3)

Used as a conjunction to connect two sentences with or without adversative implication.

Sentence + ga + sentence

Tomu wa kimasu **ga** Biru wa kimasen.

トムは来ますがビルは来ません。

Tom is coming but Bill isn't coming.

Sakana wa suki desu **ga** niku wa kirai desu.

魚は好きですが肉は嫌いです。

I like fish but dislike beef.

Renshū o shimasu **ga** jōzu ni narimasen.

練習をしますが上手になりません。

I practice but don't become better.

Kaimono ni itta **ga** nani mo kawanakatta.

買い物に行ったが何も買わなかった。

I went shopping but bought nothing.

Ga used as a transition word

Konsāto ni ikimasu **ga** issho ni kimasen ka.

コンサートに行きますが一緒に来ませんか。

I'm going to the concert. Would you like to come along?

Watashi mo sono eiga o mimashita **ga**, totemo yokatta desu.

私もその映画を見ましたが、とても良かったです。

I also saw the movie, and found it very good.

Kono jisho o tsukatte imasu **ga** totemo yaku ni tachimasu.

この辞書を使っていますが、とても役に立ちます。

I'm using this dictionary, and find it very useful.

Used with an emotive verb, indicates the cause of the emotion.

o (5) を

Noun + o + emotive verb

Watashi wa kare no seikō **o** yorokonde imasu.

私は彼の成功を喜んでいます。

I'm happy about his success.

Kare wa kodomo no shi **o** kanashinda.

彼は子供の死を悲しんだ。

He grieved at his child's death.

Kono ko wa inu **o** osoremasu.

この子は犬を恐れます。

This child is afraid of dogs.

Exercise 17 (51–53): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put o or ga in the blanks.

1. Parēdo ______ mi ni itta. Parēdo ______ yoku mieta.
パレード ______ 見に行った。パレード ______ よく見えた。
I went to see the parade. I could see the parade well.

2. Ane wa ryōri ______ jōzu desu. Yūbe Chūgoku ryōri ______ tsukurimashita.
姉は料理 ______ 上手です。昨夜中国料理 ______ 作りました。
My older sister is good at cooking. She made Chinese food last night.

3. Tomu wa Furansugo ______ hanashimasu. Akira wa Eigo ______ hanasemasu.
トムはフランス語 ______ 話します。明は英語 ______ 話せます。
Tom speaks French. Akira can speak English.

4. Kanojo wa mainichi piano no renshū ______ shite imasu ga, motto renshū ______ irimasu.
彼女は毎日ピアノの練習 ______ していますが、もっと練習 ______ 要ります。
She practices the piano every day, but she needs more practice.

5. Watashi wa kare no seikō ______ ureshii. Haha mo kare no seikō ______ yorokonde imasu.
私は彼の成功 ______ うれしい。母も彼の成功 ______ 喜んでいます。
I'm pleased by his success. My mother is also happy about it.

6. Tsumetai nomimono ______ hoshii. Bīru ______ nomitai.

冷たい飲み物 ______ 欲しい。ビール ______ 飲みたい。

I want a cold drink. I want to drink beer.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono kuruma ______ enjin ______ ii desu.

この車 ______ エンジン ______ いいです。

This car has a good engine.

2. Buraun-san wa Nihongo ______ hanaseru. Kanji ______ hyaku ______ kakeru.

ブラウンさんは日本語 ______ 話せる。漢字 ______ 百 ______ 書ける。

Miss Brown can speak Japanese. She can write about a hundred kanji.

3. Nihon ryōri ______ naka ______ nani ______ ichiban suki desu ka.

日本料理 ______ 中 ______ 何 ______ 一番好きですか。

What do you like most among Japanese food?

4. Nikai ______ kōdō ______ ongaku ______ kikoemasu.

二階 ______ 講堂 ______ 音楽 ______ 聞こえます。

I can hear music from the auditorium on the second floor.

5. Yamada-san wa Oda-san ______ tenisu ______ jōzu desu.

山田さんは小田さん ______ テニス ______ 上手です。

Miss Yamada is better at tennis than Miss Oda.

6. Kanojo wa ongaku ______ suki desu ______ supōtsu ______ suki de wa nai.

彼女は音楽 ______ 好きです ______ スポーツ ______ 好きではない。

She likes music but doesn't like sports.

7. Hara-san ga nichiyōbi ______ uchi ______ kimasu ______ , anata ______ kimasen ka.

原さんが日曜日 ______ うち ______ 来ます ______ 、あなた ______ 来ませんか。

Mr. Hara is coming to my house on Sunday. Would you like to come over, too?

8. Sono ko wa inu ______ shi ______ nani ______ kanashinda.

その子は犬 ______ 死 ______ 何 ______ 悲しんだ。

The child grieved at his dog's death more than anything.

Indicates condition. **de** (5) で 54

Noun + de

Kodomo ga hadashi **de** hashitte iru.

子供がはだしで走っている。

A child is running barefoot.

Kono yasai wa nama **de** tabemasu.

この野菜は生で食べます。

I eat this vegetable raw.

Ano kōjō wa jikan **de** haraimasu.

あの工場は時間で払います。

That factory pays by the hour.

Ichirittoru kan **de** jūsu o uru.

一リットル缶でジュースを売る。

They sell juice in one liter cans.

Limits numbers. **de** (6) で 55

Number + counter + de

Watashi wa hitori **de** kaigan e itta.

私は一人で海岸へ行った。

I went to the beach alone.

Kono nōto wa nisatsu **de** sanbyakuen desu.

このノートは二冊で三百円です。

These notebooks are 300 yen for two.

Ninen **de** purojekuto o sumasemashita.

二年でプロジェクトを済ませました。

We finished the project in two years.

Nisen'en **de** kono jisho o katta.

二千円でこの辞書を買った。

I bought this dictionary for 2,000 yen.

Sofu wa hachijūgosai **de** shinimashita.

祖父は八十五才で死にました。

My grandfather died at the age of eighty-five.

だけ dake (1)

Indicates a limit on things and amounts.

Noun + dake

Otoko no ko **dake** (ga) kimashita.

男の子だけ(が) 来ました。

Only boys came.

Mise de pan **dake** (o) kaimashita.

店でパンだけ(を)買いました。

I bought only bread at the store.

Hawai e ichido **dake** itta.

ハワイへ一度だけ行った。

I have been to Hawaii only once.

Double particles dake no, to dake/dake to

Gakusei **dake no** pātii ga atta.

学生だけのパーティーがあった。

There was a party for students only.

Sono koto wa kare **to dake/dake to** hanashita.

その事は彼とだけ・だけと話した。

Concerning the matter, I talked only with him.

Exercise 18 (54–56): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Otoko ______ hito ga hadashi ______ kaigan ______ aruite iru.
   男 ______ 人がはだし ______ 海岸 ______ 歩いている。
   A man is walking barefoot along the beach.

2. Kono sakana ______ nama ______ tabemasu ______ sore ______ furai ni shimasu.
   この魚 ______ 生 ______ 食べます ______ それ ______ フライにします。
   I eat this fish raw but fry that one.

3. Sūpā ______ ringo ______ hako ______ kaimashita.
   スーパー ______ りんご ______ 箱 ______ 買いました。
   I bought apples by the case at the supermarket.

4. Hoteru ______ Tōkyō-eki ______ takushii ______ juppun ______ ikemasu.
   ホテル ______ 東京駅 ______ タクシー ______ 十分 ______ 行けます。
   You can go from the hotel to Tokyo Station in ten minutes by taxi.

5. Kare wa jiko ______ kyonen no nigatsu ______ sanjūnisai ______ shinda.
   彼は事故 ______ 去年の二月 ______ 三十二才 ______ 死んだ。
   He died last February at age 32, due to an accident.

6. Kanda ______ hon'ya ______ kono jisho ______ nanahyakuen ______ katta.

神田 ______ 本屋 ______ この辞書 ______ 七百円 ______ 買った。

I bought this dictionary for 700 yen at a bookstore in Kanda.

7. Kanojo wa sono shigoto ______ hitori ______ nikagetsu ______ sumasemashita.

彼女はその仕事 ______ 一人 ______ 二か月 ______ 済ませました。

She finished the work all by herself in two months.

8. Terebi ______ nyūsu ______ mimasu. Eiga ______ mimasen.

テレビ ______ ニュース ______ 見ます。映画 ______ 見ません。

I watch only news on TV. I don't watch movies.

9. Jimu wa sensei ______ Nihongo ______ hanashimasu.

ジムは先生 ______ 日本語 ______ 話します。

Jim speaks in Japanese only with his teacher.

10. Gakusei ______ pātii ______ ichido ______ ikimashita.

学生 ______ パーティー ______ 一度 ______ 行きました。

I went to a party exclusively for students only once.

11. Kono kurasu ______ Biru ______ Tomu ______ tenrankai ______ itta.

このクラス ______ ビル ______ トム ______ 展覧会 ______ 行った。

In this class only Bill and Tom went to the exhibition.

Indicates a limit on an action or state. dake (2) だけ 57

Verb + dake

Maiasa jūsu o ippai nomu **dake** da.

毎朝ジュースを一杯飲むだけだ。

I just drink a glass of juice every morning.

Eki no mae no mise de wa ichido katta **dake** desu.

駅の前の店では一度買っただけです。

I shopped once in that store in front of the station.

Adjective + dake

Kono kēki wa amai **dake** desu.

このケーキは甘いだけです。

This cake is sweet, that's all.

Ano hoteru wa takai **dake** de yokunai desu.

あのホテルは高いだけで良くないです。

The hotel is just expensive, no good at all.

58 で de (7)

Indicates the time of completion or expiration (replaceable by ni).

Noun (time) + de

Kono biru wa sangatsu **de** kansei shimasu.

このビルは三月で完成します。

This building will be completed as of March.

Keiyaku wa gogatsu mikka **de** kireru.

契約は五月三日で切れる。

The contract expires as of May third.

Kongakki wa kono kinyōbi **de** owarimasu.

今学期はこの金曜日で終わります。

This term will end this Friday.

Note: Use of de hints that something lasts up to a certain time, whereas ni simply indicates the time.

59 でも demo (3)

Following a noun, indicates the alternative "or something"

Noun + demo

O-cha **demo** ikaga desu ka.

お茶でもいかがですか。

Would you like a cup of tea or something?

Toshokan e itte zasshi ka shinbun **demo** mimasu.

図書館へ行って雑誌か新聞でも見ます。

I'll go to the library and look at magazines and newspapers or something.

Double particles e demo, ni demo

Kaigan **e demo** ikimasen ka.

海岸へでも行きませんか。

How about going to the beach or somewhere?

Kono pan wa tori **ni demo** yarimashō.

このパンは鳥にでもやりましょう。

Let's give this bread to birds or something.

Exercise 19 (57–59): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono heya wa ano heya ______ hiroi ______ desu.

この部屋はあの部屋 ______ 広い ______ です。

This room is larger than that room, that's all.

2. Yūbe uchi ______ jūji ______ terebi ______ mita ______ desu.
昨夜うち ______ 十時 ______ テレビ ______ 見た ______ です。
Last night I just watched TV at home until ten o'clock.

3. Kare ______ bā ______ ikimashita ga, jūsu ______ nonda ______ desu.
彼 ______ バー ______ 行きましたが、ジュース ______ 飲んだ ______ です。
I went to the bar with him, but I just had juice.

4. Kono kēki wa amai ______ de sono pai ______ oishiku arimasen.
このケーキは甘い ______ でそのパイ ______ おいしくありません。
This cake is just sweet and isn't as tasty as that pie.

5. Sono hito to wa tomodachi ______ ie ______ ichido atta ______ da.
その人とは友達 ______ 家 ______ 一度会った ______ だ。
I just met the person once at my friend's house.

6. Watashi ______ pasupōto wa hachigatsu itsuka ______ kiremasu. Atarashii pasupōto ______ irimasu.
私 ______ パスポートは八月五日 ______ 切れます。新しいパスポート ______ 要ります。
My passport will expire as of August fifth. I need a new passport.

7. "Kaigi wa goji ______ owarimasu ka." "Hai, yoji ______ owaru ______ omoimasu."
「会議は五時 ______ 終わりますか。」 「はい、四時 ______ 終わる ______ 思います。」
"Will the conference be over by five o'clock?" "Yes, I think it'll be over at four o'clock."

8. Pan'ya ______ itte dōnatsu ______ katte kimasu.
パン屋 ______ 行ってドーナツ ______ 買ってきます。
I'll go to the bakery and buy some doughnuts or something.

9. Kono sakana ______ neko ______ yarimashō.
この魚 ______ 猫 ______ やりましょう。
Let's give this fish to a cat or something.

10. Kono mise ______ haitte atarashii konpyūtā ______ mimasen ka.
この店 ______ 入って新しいコンピューター ______ 見ませんか。
Why don't we go into this store and look at new computers or something?

60 も **mo** (4)

Provides emphasis both in positive and negative sentences.

Number/nan + counter + mo + positive verb

Hon o gosatsu **mo** kaimashita.

本を五冊も買いました。

I bought as many as five books.

Hokkaidō e nando **mo** itta.

北海道へ何度も行った。

I have been to Hokkaido many times.

One + counter + mo + negative verb

Ike ni sakana wa ippiki **mo** imasen.

池に魚は一匹もいません。

There isn't even one fish in the pond.

Ringo wa hitotsu **mo** kawanakatta.

りんごは一つも買わなかった。

I didn't buy even one apple.

Noun/V(-masu) + mo + negative verb

Kare wa watashi ni aisatsu **mo** shinakatta.

彼は私にあいさつもしなかった。

He didn't even greet me.

Kanojo wa repōto o mi **mo** shinai.

彼女はレポートを見もしない。

She doesn't even look at the report.

Kare wa mikkakan tabe **mo** shinakatta.

彼は三日間食べもしなかった。

He hasn't even eaten for three days.

61 でも **demo** (4)

Indicates two or more items as an example of a larger list.

Noun + demo + noun + demo

Sara wa Nihongo **demo** Chūgokugo **demo** hanasemasu.

サラは日本語でも中国語でも話せます。

Sarah can speak Japanese, Chinese, and other languages.

Tomu wa gorufu **demo** tenisu **demo** yarimasu.

トムはゴルフでもテニスでもやります。

Tom plays golf, tennis, and what not.

bakari (2) ばかり

Noun/V-te + bakari

Kare wa sake **bakari** nonde imasu.

彼は酒ばかり飲んでいます。

He is drinking nothing but sake.

Kodomo wa terebi o mite **bakari** iru.

子供はテレビを見てばかりいる。

The child is doing nothing but watching TV.

Adj./adjectival noun + bakari

Kono shinamono wa yasui **bakari** desu.

この品物は安いばかりです。

This article is just cheap.

Kono kago wa kirei na **bakari** de yaku ni tachimasen.

このかごはきれいなばかりで役に立ちません。

This basket is just pretty, but not useful.

Double particles de bakari/bakari de, ni bakari/bakari ni

Kanojo wa takai mise **de bakari** kaimasu.

彼女は高い店でばかり買います。

She shops only at expensive stores.

Ano shōjo wa ie no naka **bakari de** asonde iru.

あの少女は家の中ばかりで遊んでいる。

That girl plays only in her house.

Chichi wa tsuri **ni bakari** itte iru.

父は釣りにばかり行っている。

My father goes only fishing.

Exercise 20 (60–62): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kare wa biiru ______ sanbai ______ nomimashita.

彼はビール ______ 三杯 ______ 飲みました。

He drank as many as three glasses of beer.

2. Pari ______ nando ______ itta ______ , Rōma ______ made ichido ______ ikanai.

パリ ______ 何度 ______ 行った ______ 、ローマ ______ まだ一度 ______ 行かない。

I have been to Paris many times, but never to Rome.

3. Kanojo wa byōki ______ kinō ______ tabe ______ shimasen.
彼女は病気 ______ 昨日 ______ 食べ ______ しません。
Because of her illness , she hasn't even eaten since yesterday.

4. Doyōbi ______ tsuri ______ itta ______ , sakana wa ippiki ______ tsurenakatta.
土曜日 ______ 釣り ______ 行った ______ 、魚は一匹 ______ 釣れなかった。
I went fishing on Saturday, but didn't catch even one fish.

5. Kono inu wa nan ______ taberu. Niku ______ sakana ______ taberu.
この犬は何 ______ 食べる。肉 ______ 魚 ______ 食べる。
This dog eats anything. He eats meats, fish, and whatever.

6. Kare wa asa ______ ban ______ hon ______ yonde imasu.
彼は朝 ______ 晩 ______ 本 ______ 読んでいます。
He reads nothing but books from morning till night.

7. Sono ko wa kōen ______ inu ______ asonde ______ imasu.
その子は公園 ______ 犬 ______ 遊んで ______ います。
The child does nothing but play with a dog in the park.

8. Kanojo wa bōifurendo ______ tegami ______ kaite ______ iru.
彼女はボーイフレンド ______ 手紙 ______ 書いて ______ いる。
She does nothing but write letters to her boyfriend.

9. Sono eiga ______ mimashita ga, nagai ______ de yokunakatta desu.
その映画 ______ 見ましたが、長い ______ で良くなかったです。
I saw the movie; it was just long, but not good at all.

10. Kanojo wa terebi ______ mae ______ shokuji ______ shimasu.
彼女はテレビ ______ 前 ______ 食事 ______ します。
She has her meals only in front of the TV set.

Indicates an action just completed.

bakari (3) ばかり

63

V-ta + bakari

Kare wa okita **bakari** desu.

彼は起きたばかりです。

He has just gotten up.

Hikōki wa kūkō ni tsuita **bakari** desu.

飛行機は空港に着いたばかりです

The plane has just arrived at the airport.

Fune wa minato o deta **bakari** da.

船は港を出たばかりだ。

The ship has just left the port.

Parēdo ga kono michi o tōtta **bakari** da.

パレードがこの道を通ったばかりだ。

A parade has just passed by on this street.

Indicates an action about to take place, or is/has been/was taking place, or has taken/took place (replaceable by bakari in the last usage).

tokoro (1) ところ

64

V-u + tokoro

Ima dekakeru **tokoro** desu.

今出かけるところです。

I'm just about to go out.

Anata ni denwa suru **tokoro** deshita.

あなたに電話するところでした。

I was about to call you.

Tomodachi to no yakusoku o wasureru **tokoro** deshita.

友達との約束を忘れるところでした。

I almost forgot an appointment with my friend.

V-te + iru/ita + tokoro

Shukudai o shite iru **tokoro** desu.

宿題をしているところです。

I'm in the midst of doing my homework.

Kare wa hon o yonde iru **tokoro** deshita.

彼は本を読んでいるところでした。

He was in the midst of reading a book.

Watashi wa tegami o kaite ita **tokoro** desu.

私は手紙を書いていたところです。

I've been writing a letter.

V-ta + tokoro

Kare wa dekaketa **tokoro** desu.

彼は出かけたところです。

He has just left.

65 が ga (4)

Indicates the subject of a subordinate clause when it is different from the subject of the main clause.

Noun (subject) + ga

Kare **ga** kita toki, watashi wa shokuji o shite imashita.

彼が来た時、私は食事をしていました。

When he came, I was having a meal.

Kaigi **ga** owatta ato de, kanojo wa kaisha o demashita.

会議が終わった後で、彼女は会社を出ました。

After the meeting ended, she left the company.

Kare **ga** kuru made, watashi wa robii de matte ita.

彼が来るまで、私はロビーで待っていた。

I was waiting in the lobby until he came.

Watashi wa kare **ga** kuru mae ni, heya o sōji shita.

私は彼が来る前に、部屋を掃除した。

I cleaned the room before he came.

Note: The topic or subject of a main clause may be put before the subordinate clause, as in the last example.

Exercise 21 (63–65): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ima okita ______ de mada nani ______ tabete imasen.

今起きた ______ でまだ何 ______ 食べていません。

I've just gotten up and haven't eaten anything yet.

2. Hawai ______ fune wa minato ______ haitta ______ desu.

ハワイ ______ 船は港 ______ 入った ______ です。

The ship from Hawaii has just entered the port.

3. Wada-san ______ shokuji ______ dekakeru ______ desu.

和田さん ______ 食事 ______ 出かける ______ です

I'm about to go out for dinner with Mr. Wada.

4. Ashita ______ shukudai ______ wasureru ______ deshita.

明日 ______ 宿題 ______ 忘れる ______ でした。

I almost forgot about tomorrow's homework.

5. Ōsaka ______ tomodachi ______ tegami ______ kaite ita ______ desu.

大阪 ______ 友達 ______ 手紙 ______ 書いていた ______ です。

I have been writing a letter to my friend in Osaka.

6. Densha wa Nihon ______ ichiban nagai hashi ______ watatta ______ desu.

電車は日本 ______ 一番長い橋 ______ 渡った ______ です。

The train has just crossed the longest bridge in Japan.

7. Kaigi ______ owaru ______ , kono heya ______ matte ite kudasai.

会議 ______ 終わる ______ 、この部屋 ______ 待っていて下さい。

Until the meeting is over, please wait in this room.

8. Watashi ______ buchō ______ kaeru ______ , sono shigoto ______ sumaseta.

私 ______ 部長 ______ 帰る ______ 、その仕事 ______ 済ませた。

I had finished the work before the department head returned.

9. Shiken ______ owatta ato de, gakusei ______ sutajiamu ______ sakkā ______ mi ______ itta.

試験 ______ 終わった後で、学生 ______ スタジアム ______ サッカー ______ 見 ______ 行った。

After the examination ended, the students went to the stadium to see the soccer.

10. Kare ______ kyōshitsu ______ haitta toki, sensei wa gakusei ______ kanji ______ oshiete iru ______ deshita.

彼 ______ 教室 ______ 入った時、先生は学生 ______ 漢字 ______ 教えている ______ でした。

When he entered the classroom, the teacher was in the midst of teaching kanji to the students.

11. Watashi ______ eki ______ tsuita toki, densha ga hōmu ______ deta ______ datta.

私 ______ 駅 ______ 着いた時、電車がホーム ______ 出た ______ だった。

When I arrived at the station, a train had just left the platform.

66 から **kara** (3)

Used as a conjunction meaning "after" or "since."

V-te + kara

Shawā o abite **kara** nemasu.

シャワーを浴びてから寝ます。

I go to bed after taking a shower.

Shukudai o sumasete **kara,** eiga o mini ikimashō.

宿題を済ませてから、映画を見に行きましょう。

Let's go see a movie after we finish our homework.

Daigaku o sotsugyō shite **kara,** ginkō ni tsutomemasu.

大学を卒業してから、銀行に勤めます。

After graduating from college, I'll be employed in the bank.

Watashi-tachi ga kekkon shite **kara** gonen ni naru.

私達が結婚してから五年になる。

It's been five years since we got married.

67 ながら **nagara** (1)

Indicates simultaneous actions by one subject.

V(-masu) + nagara

Aruki**nagara** hanashimashō.

歩きながら話しましょう。

Let's talk as we walk.

Rajio o kiki**nagara** benkyō shimasu.

ラジオを聞きながら勉強します。

I study while listening to the radio.

Kare wa yoru hataraki**nagara** daigaku ni itta.

彼は夜働きながら大学に行った。

He went to college while working at night.

Inu ga hoe**nagara** hashitte imasu.

犬が吠えながら走っています。

The dog is barking while it runs.

Indicates the subject of a relative clause. ga (5) が 68

Noun (subject) + ga + verb + noun

Haha **ga** yoku kau mise wa asoko desu.

母がよく買う店はあそこです。

The store where my mother often shops is over there.

Hara-san **ga** tsukatte iru tsukue wa sore desu.

原さんが使っている机はそれです。

The desk that Miss Hara is using is that one.

Kore wa watashi **ga** totta nōto desu.

これは私がとったノートです。

These are the notes that I took.

Watashi **ga** Miki-san ni karita hon wa omoshiroi desu.

私が三木さんに借りた本は面白いです。

The book that I borrowed from Mr. Miki is interesting.

Exercise 22 (66–68): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Hoteru ______ asagohan ______ tabete ______ , kenbutsu ______ dekakemashita.
ホテル ______ 朝ご飯 ______ 食べて ______ 、見物 ______ 出かけました。
After having breakfast at the hotel, we went sightseeing.

2. Kare ga kono ie ______ katte ______ kotoshi ______ yonen ______ narimasu.
彼がこの家 ______ 買って ______ 今年 ______ 四年 ______ なります。
It's been four years this year since he bought this house.

3. Watashi wa kōhii ______ nomi ______ kare ______ nijikan ______ hanashita.
私はコーヒー ______ 飲み ______ 彼 ______ 二時間 ______ 話した。
I talked with him as long as two hours over a cup of coffee.

4. Gakusei wa nōto ______ tori ______ kōgi ______ kiite imasu.
学生はノート ______ とり ______ 講義 ______ 聞いています。
Students are listening to the lecture while taking notes.

5. Tomu wa jisho ______ mi ______ Nihongo ______ tegami ______ kaite iru.
トムは辞書 ______ 見 ______ 日本語 ______ 手紙 ______ 書いている。
Tom is writing a letter in Japanese while looking at a dictionary.

6. Tomodachi ______ kita toki, hanbāgā ______ tabe ______ terebi ______ sumō ______ mita.

友達 ______ 来た時、ハンバーガー ______ 食べ ______ テレビ ______ すもう ______ 見た。

When my friend came, we watched sumo on TV while eating hamburgers.

7. Watashi-tachi wa shigoto ______ sumasete ______, Hara-san ______ yoku iku bā ______ nonda.

私達は仕事 ______ 済ませて ______ 、原さん ______ よく行くバー ______ 飲んだ。

After finishing our work, we had drinks at the bar that Mr. Hara frequented.

8. Ani ______ tsutomete iru kaisha wa ano biru ______ nikai ______ arimasu.

兄 ______ 勤めている会社はあのビル ______ 二階 ______ あります。

The company where my older brother is employed is on the second floor of that building.

9. Kinō watashi ______ atta hito wa chichi ______ tomodachi ______ Honda-san desu.

昨日私 ______ 会った人は父 ______ 友達 ______ 本田さんです。

The person that I met yesterday is Mr. Honda, my father's friend.

10. Watashi wa Tanaka-san ______ kaita repōto ______ nando ______ yomimashita.

私は田中さん ______ 書いたレポート ______ 何度 ______ 読みました。

I read many times the report that Miss Tanaka wrote.

69 の no (3)

Indicates the subject of a relative clause (replaceable by ga).

Noun (subject) + no + verb + noun

Kare **no** kaku hon wa omoshiroi.

彼の書く本は面白い。

The books that he writes are interesting.

Are wa ani **no** oshiete iru gakkō desu.

あれは兄の教えている学校です。

That is the school where my older brother is teaching.

Oda-san **no** tsutta sakana wa ōkikatta.

小田さんの釣った魚は大きかった。

The fish that Mr. Oda caught was big.

Watashi **no** shiranai hito ga ōzei imashita.

私の知らない人が大勢いました。

There were many people whom I did not know.

kara (4) から 70

Used as a conjunction, indicates a cause or reason.

Sentence + kara

Ashita shiken ga aru **kara**, konban benkyō shimasu.

明日試験があるから、今晩勉強します。

Because I have an examination tomorrow, I'll study tonight.

Biiru o nonda **kara**, nemui desu.

ビールを飲んだから、眠いです。

Because I drank beer, I'm sleepy.

Ima isogashii **kara**, ato de kite kudasai.

今忙しいから、後で来てください。

I'm busy now, so please come later.

Kono ka wa taisetsu da **kara**, yoku fukushū shinasai.

この課は大切だから、よく復習しなさい。

Because this chapter is important, please review it well.

Byōki datta **kara**, gakkō o yasunda.

病気だったから、学校を休んだ。

Because I was ill, I was absent from school.

node (1) ので 71

Indicates a more concrete reason than kara. Cannot be followed by a main clause indicating the speaker's volition, command, or invitation.

Sentence + node

Shiai ga aru **node**, mainichi renshū shite iru.

試合があるので、毎日練習している。

Because there's a tournament, we practice every day.

Tenki ga yokatta **node**, pikunikku ni itta.

天気が良かったので、ピクニックに行った。

Because the weather was good, we went on a picnic.

Nichiyōbi datta **node**, dōbutsuen wa konde ita.

日曜日だったので、動物園は混んでいた。

Because it was Sunday, the zoo was crowded.

Toshokan was shizuka na **node**, yoku benkyō dekimasu.

図書館は静かなので、よく勉強出来ます。

The library is quiet, so I can study well.

Note: Da changes to na before **node** as in the last example.

Exercise 23 (69–71): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put kara or node in the blanks.

1. Tanaka-san ga iku ______ , watashi mo ikimasu.
田中さんが行く ______ 、私も行きます。
Because Miss Tanaka will go, I'll go, too.

2. Buchō wa ima isogashii ______ , ato de denwa shite kudasai.
部長は今忙しい ______ 、後で電話して下さい。
The department head is busy now, so please call later.

3. Shukudai ga aru ______ , eiga o mi ni ikemasen.
宿題がある ______ 、映画を見に行けません。
Because I have homework, I can't go to see the movie.

4. Doyōbi na ______ , depāto wa konde imasu.
土曜日な ______ 、デパートは混んでいます。
Because it is Saturday, the department store is crowded.

5. Kēki o moratta ______ , issho ni tabemashō.
ケーキをもらった ______ 、一緒に食べましょう。
I got some cakes, so let's have them together.

6. Yoku renshū shita ______ , piano ga jōzu ni narimashita.
よく練習した ______ 、ピアノが上手になりました。
Because I practiced hard, I've become better at the piano.

7. Ashita wa nichiyōbi da ______ , uchi ni imasu.
明日は日曜日だ ______ 、うちにいます。
Tomorrow is Sunday, so I stay home.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Haha wa chichi ______ tsutta sakana ______ ryōri shita.
母は父 ______ 釣った魚 ______ 料理した。
My mother cooked the fish that my father caught.

2. Heya ______ kabe ______ Hirota-san ______ totta shashin ga hatte aru.
部屋 ______ 壁 ______ 広田さん ______ とった写真がはってある。
The photo that Mr. Hirota took is on the wall of the room.

3. Biru wa Nihon ______ gonen ______ iru ______ , Nihongo ______ jōzu desu.
ビルは日本 ______ 五年 ______ いる ______ 、日本語 ______ 上手です。
Bill has been in Japan as many as five years, so he's good at Japanese.

4. Hikōki ______ deru ______ jikan ga aru ______ , o-cha ______ nomimashō.
飛行機 ______ 出る ______ 時間がある ______ 、お茶 ______ 飲みましょう。
We have time before the plane leaves, so let's have tea or something.

5. Kono jisho wa ii desu ______ , takai ______ kaemasen.
この辞書はいいです ______ 、高い ______ 買えません。
This dictionary is good, but too expensive to buy.

6. Chichi ga isha datta ______ , watashi ______ isha ______ natta.
父が医者だった ______ 、私 ______ 医者 ______ なった。
Because my father was a doctor, I also became a doctor.

Indicates a modified pronoun. **no** (4) の 72

Noun/adj./adjectival noun + no

Chairo **no** o kudasai.

茶色のを下さい。

Give me a brown one.

Shiroi **no** o erabimashita.

白いのを選びました。

I chose a white one.

Kono naka de suki na **no** o torinasai.

この中で好きなのを取りなさい。

Pick the one you like among these.

Verb + no

Shi o kaku **no** wa Oda-san desu.

詩を書くのは小田さんです。

The one who writes poetry is Miss Oda.

Kowareta **no** wa sutete kudasai.

こわれたのは捨てて下さい。

Please throw away the broken ones.

73 の **no** (5)

Used to nominalize verbs and sentences.

V-u + no

Narau **no** wa oshieru **no** yori yasashii.

習うのは教えるのより易しい。

Learning is easier than teaching.

Tsuri ni iku **no** wa yamemashō.

釣りに行くのはやめましょう。

Let's call off going fishing.

Sentence + no

Tomu ga dansu suru **no** o mita.

トムがダンスするのを見た。

I saw Tom dance.

Hara-san ga yameru **no** o shiranakatta.

原さんが辞めるのを知らなかった。

I didn't know that Mr. Hara is quitting.

74 なら **nara** (1)

Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition.

Noun/adjectival noun + nara

Watashi **nara**, sonna koto wa shinai.

私なら、そんな事はしない。

If I were you, I wouldn't do such a thing.

Ashita **nara**, hima ga arimasu.

明日なら、暇があります。

If (it's) tomorrow, I'm free.

Sono hon ga hitsuyō **nara**, kainasai.

その本が必要なら、買いなさい。

If you need that book, buy it.

Adjective + (no) + nara

Chikai (no) **nara**, arukimasu.

近い（の）なら、歩きます。

If it's near, I'll walk.

Verb + (no) + nara

Kare ga iku (no) **nara**, watashi mo ikimasu.

彼が行く（の）なら、私も行きます。

If he'll go, I'll go, too.

Exercise 24 (72–74): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono naka ______ ichiban yasui ______ wa ano chairo ______ desu.
この中 ______ 一番安い ______ はあの茶色 ______ です。
The cheapest one among these is that brown one.

2. Shōuindō ______ aru ______ o misete kudasai.
ショーウインドー ______ ある ______ を見せて下さい。
Please show me the one that is in the show window.

3. Akai ______ to shiroi ______ to, dochira ______ shimasu ka.
赤い ______ と白い ______ と、どちら ______ しますか。
Which are you taking, the red one or white one?

4. Buchō ______ hanashite iru ______ wa Sumisu ______ iu hito desu.
部長 ______ 話している ______ はスミス ______ いう人です。
The person who is talking with the department head is called Smith.

5. Miki-sensei wa gakusei ______ sukii ______ iku ______ ga suki desu.
三木先生は学生 ______ スキー ______ 行く ______ が好きです。
Prof. Miki likes going skiing with his students.

6. Hara-san ______ nyūin shita ______ o ima ______ shiranakatta.
原さん ______ 入院した ______ を今 ______ 知らなかった。
I didn't know until now that Mr. Hara had been hospitalized.

7. Koko ______ kodomo ga inu ______ asonde iru ______ ga miemasu.
ここ ______ 子供が犬 ______ 遊んでいる ______ が見えます。
From here I can see a child playing with a dog.

8. Gogo ______ , hima ga aru ______ , itsu ______ kite kudasai.
午後 ______ 、暇がある ______ 、いつ ______ 来て下さい。
If (it's) the afternoon, I am free, so come any time.

9. Jisho ______ wasureta ______ , watashi ______ o tsukainasai.
辞書 ______ 忘れた ______ 、私 ______ を使いなさい。
If you forgot your dictionary, use mine.

10. Tenpura ______ tabetai ______ , Wada-san ga ii mise ______ shitte imasu.
てんぷら ______ 食べたい ______ 、和田さんがいい店 ______ 知っています。
If you want to eat tempura, Mr. Wada knows good restaurants.

75 なら **nara** (2)

Indicates a topic (replaceable by wa).

Noun (topic) + nara

Yōsho **nara**, sangai ni arimasu.

洋書なら、三階にあります。

As for foreign books, they're on the third floor.

Sono kisoku **nara**, raigetsu kawarimasu.

その規則なら、来月変ります。

As for that regulation, it will change next month.

76 と **to** (6)

Indicates a condition that brings about an uncontrollable result. The main clause cannot be a command, a request, or volitional.

V-u/-nai + to

Haru ga kuru **to**, atatakaku narimasu.

春が来ると、暖かくなります。

When spring comes, it gets warm.

Ame ga furu **to**, shiai wa arimasen.

雨が降ると、試合はありません。

If it rains, there will be no game.

Kare ga konai **to**, gorufu ga dekinai.

彼が来ないと、ゴルフが出来ない。

If he doesn't come, we can't golf.

Sensei ga yukkuri hanasanai **to**, wakarimasen.

先生がゆっくり話さないと、分かりません。

If the teacher doesn't speak slowly, I can't understand.

Adj-i + to

Shinamono ga warui **to**, yoku urenai.

品物が悪いと、よく売れない。

If goods are bad, they won't sell well.

Noun/adjectival noun + da + to

Semai michi da **to**, basu wa tōremasen.

狭い道だと、バスは通れません。

If it's a narrow street, buses can't get through.

Shizuka da **to**, yoku nemuremasu.

静かだと、よく眠れます。

If it's quiet, I can sleep well.

Used as a conjunction, suggests or supposes the probable or inevitable result of certain conditions.

ba (1) ば

V-e/-re + ba

Chikatetsu de ike**ba**, nijuppun kakaru.

地下鉄で行けば、二十分かかる。

If you go by subway, it takes 20 minutes

Ano yama ni nobore**ba**, ume ga mieru.

あの山に登れば、海が見える。

If you climb that mountain, you can see the ocean.

Dekire**ba**, kore mo yatte kudasai.

出来れば、これもやって下さい。

If you can, please do this, too.

Adj-kere + ba

Yasukere**ba**, kaimasu.

安ければ、買います。

If it's cheap, I'll buy it.

Kono karendā ga hoshikere**ba**, motte ikinasai.

このカレンダーが欲しければ、持って行きなさい。

If you want this calendar, take it with you.

Exercise 25 (75–77): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kurabu ______ kisoku ______ , kono panfuretto ______ Eigo ______ Nihongo ______ kaite arimasu.

クラブ ______ 規則 ______ 、このパンフレット ______ 英語 ______ 日本語 ______ 書いてあります。

As for the club regulations, they are written in English and Japanese in this pamphlet.

2. Tomu ______ , daigaku ______ sotsugyō shite ______ , Amerika ______ kaetta.

トム ______ 、大学 ______ 卒業して ______ 、アメリカ ______ 帰った。

As for Tom, after graduating from college, he returned to America.

3. Tenki ga ii ______ , koko ______ Fuji-san ______ miemasu.

天気がいい ______ 、ここ ______ 富士山 ______ 見えます。

If weather is good, Mt. Fuji can be seen from here.

4. Ie ______ hairu ______ , nikai ______ rajio ______ kikoete kita.

家 ______ 入る ______ 、二階 ______ ラジオ ______ 聞こえてきた。

When the house was entered, a radio was heard from the second floor.

5. Shinjuku ______ iku ______ , resutoran ______ mise ______ eigakan ______ ga aru.
新宿 ______ 行く ______ 、レストラン ______ 店 ______ 映画館 ______ がある。
If you go to Shinjuku, there are restaurants, stores, and movie houses, among others.

6. Gaikokugo ______ mainichi tsukawanai ______ , jōzu ______ narimasen.
外国語 ______ 毎日使わない ______ 、上手 ______ なりません。
As for a foreign language, if you don't use it every day, you won't become good at it.

7. Kyōto ______ jikan ga are ______ , Nijōjō ______ mitai desu.
京都 ______ 時間があれ ______ 、二条城 ______ 見たいです。
If I have time in Kyoto, I'd like to see Nijo Castle, too.

8. Koko ______ hachiji ______ dere ______ , niji ______ mukō ______ tsukimasu.
ここ ______ 八時 ______ 出れ ______ 、二時 ______ 向こう ______ 着きます。
If we leave here at eight o'clock, we'll arrive there by two o'clock.

9. Kare no jūsho ______ shitte ire ______ , kono kami ______ kaite kudasai.
彼の住所 ______ 知っていれ ______ 、この紙 ______ 書いて下さい。
If you know his address, please write it on this paper.

10. Doyōbi ______ ame ga fure ______ , uchi ______ shigoto ______ shimasu.
土曜日 ______ 雨が降れ ______ 、うち ______ 仕事 ______ します。
If it rains on Saturday, I'll work at home.

78 ば ba (2)

In the form ba ii, means "you need only" or "all you have to do is."

V-e /-re + ba ii

Mainichi sukoshi undō sure**ba** ii.

毎日少し運動すればいい。

You need only exercise a little every day.

Atama ga itai nara, kono kusuri o nome**ba** ii desu.

頭が痛いなら、この薬を飲めばいいです。

If you have a headache, you need only take this medicine.

Shiritakereba, dare ka ni kike**ba** ii.

知りたければ、だれかに聞けばいい。

If you want to know, all you have to do is ask someone.

Used to enumerate two or more actions or states.

ba (3) ば

79

Noun + mo + V-ba/-nakereba ...noun + mo + positive/negative verb

Jimu wa sashimi mo tabere**ba** sushi mo taberu.

ジムはさしみも食べればすしも食べる。

Jim eats both sashimi and sushi.

Biru wa sake mo nomanakere**ba** tabako mo suwanai.

ビルは酒も飲まなければたばこも吸わない。

Bill neither drinks sake nor smokes cigarettes.

Adj-ku + mo + nakereba ... adj-ku + mo + nai

Sono niwa wa hiroku mo nakere**ba** semaku mo nai.

その庭は広くもなければ狭くもない。

The garden is neither large nor small.

Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition.

tara (1) たら

80

V-ta/-nakatta + ra

Yuki ga fut**tara**, jitensha ni noremasen.

雪が降ったら、自転車に乗れません。

If it snows, I can't ride a bike.

Tomu ga ki**tara**, issho ni sushi o tabe ni ikimasu.

トムが来たら、一緒にすしを食べに行きます。

If Tom comes, I'll go out to have sushi with him.

Kotoba ga wakaranat**tara**, jisho de shirabenasai

言葉が分からなかったら、辞書で調べなさい。

If you don't understand the word, check it in a dictionary.

Adj-katta + ra

Samukat**tara**, mado o shimete kudasai.

寒かったら、窓を閉めて下さい。

If you are cold, please close the window.

Noun/adjectival noun + datta + ra

Hiragana dat**tara** yomemasu.

ひらがなだったら、読めます。

If it's hiragana, I can read it.

Shigoto ga kantan dat**tara**, sugu dekiru.

仕事が簡単だったら、すぐ出来る。

If the job is simple, I can do it easily.

Exercise 26 (78–80): Follow the instructions below.

A. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kanji ______ shiranai ______ , hiragana ______ kake ______ ii desu.
漢字 ______ 知らない ______ 、ひらがな ______ 書け ______ いいです。
If you don't know kanji, you need only write in hiragana.

2. Ichinichi ______ nido kono kusuri ______ nome ______ ii desu.
一日 ______ 二度この薬 ______ 飲め ______ いいです。
You need only take this medicine twice a day.

3. Jimu wa benkyō ______ sure ______ undō ______ shimasu.
ジムは勉強 ______ すれ ______ 運動 ______ します。
Jim does both studies and exercises.

4. Ano hito wa Eigo ______ hanasanakere ______ Nihongo ______ hanasanai.
あの人は英語 ______ 話さなけれ ______ 日本語 ______ 話さない。
She speaks neither English nor Japanese.

5. Kare ______ tsutomete iru kaisha wa ōkiku ______ nakere ______ chiisaku ______ nai.
彼 ______ 勤めている会社は大きく ______ なけれ ______ 小さく ______ ない。
The company where he is employed is neither large nor small.

B. Translate the following using -ba or -tara forms.

1. if the weather is good

2. if Tom doesn't come

3. if you don't understand

4. if the book is interesting

5. if it rains

6. if you have time

tara (2) たら

81

Used as a conjunction to indicate an action which takes place before the action in the main clause takes place.

V-ta + ra

Kono shigoto o sumase**tara**, uchi e kaerimasu.

この仕事を済ませたら、うちへ帰ります。

When I finish this work, I'll go home.

Hon o yon**dara**, kaeshite kudasai.

本を読んだら、返して下さい。

When you finish reading the book, please return it.

Daigaku o de**tara**, sensei ni naritai.

大学を出たら、先生になりたい。

After I graduate from college, I want to become a teacher.

tokoro (2) ところ

82

Used as a conjunction to indicate a condition that brings about a discovery.

V-ta + tokoro

Mō ichido shirabeta **tokoro**, kono dēta wa machigatte ita.

もう一度調べたところ、このデータは間違っていた。

When I checked again, this data was wrong.

Kare no ofisu e itta **tokoro**, dokoka e iten shite ita.

彼のオフィスへ行ったところ、どこかへ移転していた。

When I went to his office, it had moved somewhere.

83 ても **te mo** (1)

Used as a conjunction to mean "even if."

V-te/-nakute+mo

Hajime**te mo** ii desu ka.

始めてもいいですか。

May we start? (Is it all right even if we start?)

Isoi**de mo** ma ni aimasen.

急いでも間に合いません。

Even if you hurry, you won't be in time.

Kusuri o nomanaku**te mo** ii desu.

薬を飲まなくてもいいです。

You don't have to take the medicine. (Even if you don't take the medicine, it's all right.)

Adj-kute + mo

Tōku**te mo** arukimasu.

遠くても歩きます。

Even if it's far, I'll walk.

Takaku**te mo** ii desu ka.

高くてもいいですか。

Is it all right even if it's expensive?

Exercise 27 (81–83): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kūkō ______ tsui ______ , Hirota-san ______ kite imashita.

空港 ______ 着い ______ 、広田さん ______ 来ていました。

When I arrived at the airport, Mr. Hirota was there.

2. Kare ______ ie ______ denwa shi ______ , kare wa dekaketa ______ deshita.

彼 ______ 家 ______ 電話し ______ 、彼は出かけた ______ でした。

When I called his house, he had just left.

3. Ano mise ______ kamera ______ kat ______ , depāto ______ gopāsento yasukatta.

あの店 ______ カメラ ______ 買っ ______ 、デパート ______ 五パーセント安かった。

When I bought a camera at that store, it was five percent cheaper than in a department store.

4. Shukudai ______ sumase ______ , toshokan ______ hon ______ kaeshi ______ ikimasu.

宿題 ______ 済ませ ______ 、図書館 ______ 本 ______ 返し ______ 行きます。

After I finish my homework, I'll go to the library to return books.

5. Fakkusu ______ shinamono ______ chūmon shita ______ , machigatta ______ ga kita.
ファックス ______ 品物 ______ 注文した ______ 、間違った ______ が来た。
When I ordered an item by fax, the wrong thing came.

6. Kare ______ tegami ______ kaita ______ , isshūkan ______ henji ga kita.
彼 ______ 手紙 ______ 書いた ______ 、一週間 ______ 返事が来た。
When I wrote a letter to him, his answer came in a week.

7. Kono hon ______ kari ______ ii desu ga, getsuyōbi ______ kaeshite kudasai.
この本 ______ 借り ______ いいですが、月曜日 ______ 返して下さい。
You may borrow this book, but please return it by Monday.

8. Goji ______ kyōshitsu ______ benkyō shi ______ ii desu ka.
五時 ______ 教室 ______ 勉強し ______ いいですか。
May I study in the classroom until five o'clock?

9. Takaku ______ ano kuruma ______ kaitai desu.
高く ______ あの車 ______ 買いたいです。
Even if it's expensive, I want to buy that car.

10. Koko ______ namae ______ kaite kudasai. Jūsho ______ kakanaku ______ ii desu.
ここ ______ 名前 ______ 書いて下さい。住所 ______ 書かなく ______ いいです。
Please write your name here. You don't have to write your address.

Used with a set of contrasting verbs and adjectives.

te mo (2) ても

84

V-te + mo ... v-nakute + mo

Yamada-san ga it**te mo** ikanaku**te mo** watashi wa ikimasu.

山田さんが行っても行かなくても私は行きます。

I'll go whether Mr. Yamada will or not.

Kare ga ki**te mo** konaku**te mo** onaji da.

彼が来ても来なくても同じだ。

Whether he comes or not makes no difference.

Adj-kute + mo ... adj-kunakute + mo

Muzukashiku**te mo** muzukashikunaku**te mo** yatte mimasu.

難しくても難しくなくてもやってみます。

I will try whether it is difficult or not.

Takaku**te mo** yasuku**te mo** kaimasen.

高くても安くても買いません。

Whether it's expensive or inexpensive, I won't buy it.

85 ても te mo (3)

Used with an interrogative word to mean "no matter what, when, where, who," etc.

Interrogative + (particle) + V-te + mo

Itsu ki**te mo**, kare wa rusu desu.

いつ来ても、彼は留守です。

No matter when I come, he's out.

Nani o shi**te mo**, kanojo wa jōzu da.

何をしても、彼女は上手だ。

No matter what she does, she's good.

Dare ni kii**te mo**, shirimasen.

だれに聞いても、知りません。

No matter whom I ask, no one knows.

Donna ni + adj-kute + mo

Donna ni isogashiku**te mo**, undō shimasu.

どんなに忙しくても、運動します。

No matter how busy I am, I do exercises.

Donna ni hoshiku**te mo** ima kaenai.

どんなに欲しくても、今買えない。

No matter how much I want it, I can't buy it now.

86 ては te wa (1)

Indicates a condition that will bring about a negative conclusion.

V-te + wa

Koko de tabe**te wa** ikemasen.

ここで食べてはいけません。

You shouldn't eat here. (If you eat here, it isn't good.)

Koko ni kuruma o tome**te wa** komaru.

ここに車を止めては困る。

You shouldn't park here.
(If you park here, it's a problem.)

Adj-kute + wa

Sonna ni tōku**te wa** arukemasen.

そんなに遠くては歩けません。

If it's so far, I can't walk.

Konna ni furuku**te wa** dame desu.

こんなに古くては駄目です。

If it's old like this, it's not good.

Exercise 28 (84–86): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Sono koto ______ , kachō ______ hanashi ______ hanasanaku ______ onaji desu.
その事 ______ 、課長 ______ 話し ______ 話さなく ______ 同じです。
As for the matter, it makes no difference whether you talk with the section chief or not.

2. Kanojo ______ tsukutta ryōri ______ , oishiku ______ oishikunaku ______ tabemasu.
彼女 ______ 作った料理 ______ 、おいしく ______ おいしくなく ______ 食べます。
If it's the food she cooked, I'll eat it whether it is tasty or not.

3. Itsu ki ______ , Tomu wa tēpu ______ kiki ______ benkyō shite imasu.
いつ来 ______ 、トムはテープ ______ 聞き ______ 勉強しています。
No matter when I come, Tom is studying while listening to the tapes.

4. Donna ni yoku ______ , onaji eiga ______ nido ______ mitakunai.
どんなに良く ______ 、同じ映画 ______ 二度 ______ 見たくない。
No matter how good it is, I don't want to see the same movie twice.

5. Densha no naka ______ tabako ______ sut ______ komarimasu.
電車の中 ______ たばこ ______ 吸っ ______ 困ります。
You shouldn't smoke in the train.

6. Kaigi ______ owaru ______ ano heya ______ hait ______ ikemasen.
会議 ______ 終わる ______ あの部屋 ______ 入っ ______ いけません。
You shouldn't enter that room until the meeting is over.

7. Kono e ______ hoshii desu ______ , konna ni takaku ______ kaemasen.
この絵 ______ 欲しいです ______ 、こんなに高く ______ 買えません。
I want this painting, but it's too expensive to buy.

87 のみ nomi (1)

Indicates a limit on things, actions, or states (replaceable by dake).

Noun/verb/adjective + nomi

Kachō **nomi** (ga) enkai ni shusseki shita.

課長のみ（が）宴会に出席した。

The section chief alone attended the banquet.

Heya ni wa tsukue (ga) hitotsu aru **nomi** desu.

部屋には机（が）一つあるのみです。

There is nothing in the room but one desk.

Kono ie wa ōkii **nomi** desu.

この家は大きいのみです。

This house is large, that's all.

Double particles ni nomi/nomi ni, de nomi/nomi de

Sensei **ni nomi** shirasemashita.

先生にのみ知らせました。

I informed only the teacher.

Soko e wa kuruma **de nomi** ikeru.

そこへは車でのみ行ける。

You can go there only by car.

88 まで made (2)

Adds the sense of "even," for emphasis.

Noun/V-te + made

Sensei **made** kōgi ni shusseki shita.

先生まで講義に出席した。

Even teachers attended the lecture.

Kare wa gakkō o yasunde **made** tetsudatte kureta.

彼は学校を休んでまで手伝ってくれた。

He even skipped school to help me.

Double particles ni made, de made

Sore wa sensei **ni made** hanashita.

それは先生にまで話した。

I told it even to my teacher.

Densha no naka **de made** yomimasu.

電車の中でまで読みます。

I read even in the train.

Adds the sense of "even," for emphasis.

sae (1) さえ

Noun/gerund + sae

Sonna koto wa saru (de) **sae** dekiru.
そんな事は猿（で）さえ出来る。
Even a monkey can do that.

Kore wa tatsu koto **sae** dekinakatta.
彼は立つことさえ出来なかった。
He couldn't even stand up.

Double particles kara sae, ni sae

Enjo wa kaigai **kara sae** kita.
援助は海外からさえ来た。
Aid came even from abroad.

Kare wa shigoto **ni sae** konakatta.
彼は仕事にさえ来なかった。
He didn't even come to work.

Exercise 29 (87–89): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Shachō ______ enkai ______ shusseki shita ______ kikimashita.
社長 ______ 宴会 ______ 出席した ______ 聞きました。
I heard that only company presidents attended the banquet.

2. Chūgokugo ______ hanaseru ______ wa Tomu ______ desu.
中国語 ______ 話せる ______ はトム ______ です。
Tom is the only one who can speak Chinese.

3. Watashi ______ kaita shōsetsu wa Hara-san ______ miseta.
私 ______ 書いた小説は原さん ______ 見せた。
I showed only to Miss Hara the novel that I had written.

4. Kare wa tomodachi ______ kuruma ______ karite ______ doraibu ______ ikimasu.
彼は友達 ______ 車 ______ 借りて ______ ドライブ ______ 行きます。
He even borrows a car from his friend to go for a drive.

5. Jimu wa sensei ______ ryokō ______ shashin ______ miseta.
ジムは先生 ______ 旅行 ______ 写真 ______ 見せた。
Jim showed the photos of his trip even to his teacher.

6. Kuruma ______ nakere ______ , kaimono ______ ikemasen.
車 ______ なけれ ______ 、買物 ______ 行けません。
If you don't have a car, you can't even go shopping.

7. Chichi wa byōki ______ nan kagetsu ______ aruku koto ______ dekimasen.

父は病気 ______ 何か月 ______ 歩くこと ______ 出来ません。

Due to illness, my father can't even walk for many months.

90 さえ sae (2)

Adds a sense of "if only" or "as long as" to empasize conditions required for a certain result.

Noun + sae + V-ba

Benkyō **sae** sureba, ii daigaku ni hairemasu.

勉強さえすれば、いい大学に入れます。

If you just study, you can get into a good college.

Jikan **sae** areba, kono purojekuto o yaritai desu.

時間さえあれば、このプロジェクトをやりたいです。

If I can just find time, I'd like to do this project.

Kuruma **sae** karirarereba, ashita ikimasu.

車さえ借りられれば、明日行きます。

If I can only rent a car, I'll go tomorrow.

V(-masu) + sae + sureba; V-te + sae + ireba

Kanji wa renshū shi **sae** sureba, jōzu ni narimasu.

漢字は練習しさえすれば、上手になります。

As long as you practice kanji, you will get better at it.

Terebi o mite **sae** ireba, kono ko wa shiawase da.

テレビを見てさえいれば、この子は幸せだ。

This child is happy as long as he is watching TV.

Adj-ku + sae + areba

Yasuku **sae** areba, kaimasu.

安くさえあれば、買います。

As long as it's inexpensive, I'll buy it.

Used as a conjunction to indicate "although" or "in spite of the fact that."

noni (1) のに

91

Verb + noni

Kanojo wa netsu ga aru **noni**, kusuri o nomanai.

彼女は熱があるのに、薬を飲まない。

Although she has a fever, she doesn't take medicine.

Adjective + noni

Chikai **noni**, kuruma de ikimashita.

近いのに、車で行きました。

Although it's near, we went by car.

Noun/adjectival noun + na + noni

Kare wa saijitsu na **noni**, shigoto ni itta.

彼は祭日なのに、仕事に行った。

Although it's a holiday, he went to work.

Heta na **noni**, tenisu ga suki da.

下手なのに、テニスが好きだ。

Although I'm not good at it, I love tennis.

Used as a conjunction to indicate "although," "though," or "but."

nagara (2) ながら

92

V(-masu) + nagara

O-kane ga ari**nagara** haraimasen.

お金がありながら払いません。

Although he has money, he doesn't pay.

Kanojo wa isogashii to ii**nagara** ryokō ni bakari itte iru.

彼女は忙しいと言いながら、旅行にばかり行っている。

Although she says she is busy, she is always going on a trip.

Noun/adjectival noun + nagara

Fuyu **nagara** koko wa atatakai desu.

冬ながらここは暖かいです。

It's warm here, though it's winter.

Zannen **nagara** shusseki dekimasen.

残念ながら出席出来ません。

I'm sorry, but I can't attend.

Adj-i + nagara

Mazushii **nagara** daigaku ni itta.

貧しいながら大学に行った。

Although I was poor, I went to college.

Exercise 30 (90–92): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Jisho ______ areba, kono tegami ______ yomu ______ wa kantan desu.
辞書 ______ あれば、この手紙 ______ 読む ______ は簡単です。
As long as I have a dictionary, reading this letter is simple.

2. Kare wa tomodachi ______ sake o nonde ______ ireba, shiawase desu.
彼は友達 ______ 酒を飲んで ______ いれば、幸せです。
He's happy as long as he is drinking sake with his friends.

3. Kōgi wa omoshiroku ______ areba, nagaku ______ ii desu.
講義は面白く ______ あれば、長く ______ いいです。
The lecture can be long, provided it's interesting.

4. Samui ______ , chichi wa niwa ______ hataraite iru.
寒い ______ 、父は庭 ______ 働いている。
Although it's cold, my father is working in the yard.

5. Tomu wa ashita shiken ______ aru ______ , terebi ______ mite iru.
トムは明日試験 ______ ある ______ 、テレビ ______ 見ている。
Although he has an exam tomorrow, Tom is doing nothing but watch TV.

6. Kare wa gaikokujin ______ , Nihon ______ rekishi ______ yoku shitte imasu.
彼は外国人 ______ 、日本 ______ 歴史 ______ よく知っています。
Although he's a foreigner, he knows Japanese history very well.

7. Kaimono ______ iki ______ , nani ______ kaimasen deshita.
買物 ______ 行き ______ 、何 ______ 買いませんでした。
Although I went shopping, I didn't buy anything.

toka (1) とか 93

Indicates that a list of two or more things or actions is not exhaustive.

Noun + toka + noun + toka

Depāto de kutsu **toka** sētā **toka** (o) kaimashita.

デパートで靴とかセーターとか（を）買いました。

I bought shoes, sweaters, and other things at the department store.

V-u + toka + V-u + toka

Yasumi ni wa tenisu o suru **toka** hon o yomu **toka** shimasu.

休みにはテニスをするとか本を読むとかします。

On holidays I do things like playing tennis or reading books.

tari (1) たり 94

Lists two or more actions in no particular sequence. (A single action may be listed as a representative of others.)

V-tari + V-tari + suru

Non**dari** tabe**tari** odot**tari** shita.

飲んだり食べたり踊ったりした。

We did things like drinking, eating, and dancing.

Fuyu ni wa onsen ni it**tari** shimasu.

冬には温泉に行ったりします。

In winter I do such things as going to hot springs.

tari (2) たり 95

Indicates actions or states that alternate.

V-tari + V-tari/-nakattari + suru

Hito ga it**tari** ki**tari** shite iru.

人が行ったり来たりしている。

People are coming and going.

Tabako o sut**tari** suwanakat**tari** shimasu.

たばこを吸ったり吸わなかったりします。

Sometimes I smoke, and sometimes I don't.

Adj-kattari + adj-kattari/-kunakattari + suru

Shiken wa muzukashikat**tari** yasashikat**tari** suru.

試験は難しかったり易しかったりする。

Exams are sometimes difficult and sometimes easy.

Tenki wa yokat**tari** yokunakat**tari** shita.

天気は良かったり良くなかったりした。

The weather was sometimes good and sometimes not good.

Noun + dattari + noun + dattari + suru

Nihongo no gakusei wa Amerikajin dat**tari**, Chūgokujin dat**tari** suru.

日本語の学生はアメリカ人だったり、中国人だったりする。

Students of Japanese are sometimes American and sometimes Chinese.

Kare wa bengoshi dat**tari** sakka dat**tari** suru.

彼は弁護士だったり作家だったりする。

Sometimes he is a lawyer and sometimes a writer.

Exercise 31 (93–95): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kurisumasu ______ haha ______ burausu ______ sukāfu ______ moraimashita.

クリスマス ______ 母 ______ ブラウス ______ スカーフ ______ もらいました。

For Christmas I received a blouse, a scarf, and other things from my mother.

2. Tomodachi ______ kyanpu ______ iku ______ umi ______ oyogu ______ shimasu.

友達 ______ キャンプ ______ 行く ______ 海 ______ 泳ぐ ______ します。

I do things like going camping or swimming in the sea with my friends.

3. Itaria ______ opera ______ mi ______ bijutsukan ______ it ______ shita.

イタリア ______ オペラ ______ 見 ______ 美術館 ______ 行っ ______ した。

In Italy we did things like seeing operas and visiting art museums.

4. Ie no mae ______ kuruma ______ it ______ ki ______ shite imasu.

家の前 ______ 車 ______ 行っ ______ 来 ______ しています。

Cars are coming and going in front of the house.

5. Kanji ______ tesuto wa muzukashikat ______ yasahikat ______ shimasu.

漢字 ______ テストは難しかっ ______ 易しかっ ______ します。

Kanji tests are sometimes difficult and sometimes easy.

6. Watashi-tachi ______ sensei wa Nihonjin dat ______ Amerikajin dat ______ suru.

私達 ______ 先生は日本人だっ ______ アメリカ人だっ ______ する。

Our teachers are sometimes Japanese and sometimes American.

noni (2) のに 96

Indicates a purpose or function.

V-u + noni

Sakubun o kaku **noni** wāpuro o tsukaimasu.

作文を書くのにワープロを使います。

I use a word processor to write compositions.

Shoppingu mōru wa kaimono o suru **noni** benri na tokoro desu.

ショッピングモールは買物をするのに便利な所です。

A shopping mall is a convenient place to shop.

no (6) の 97

In the form "no desu," indicates or asks an explanation or reason. Note that "n desu" is more colloquial.

Sentence + no + desu

"Naze ikanai **no** desu ka"
"Atama ga itai **no** desu."

「なぜ行かないのですか。」
「頭が痛いのです。」

"Why don't you go?"
"I have a headache."

"Dōshite tabenai **n** desu ka"
"Ima tabetakunai **n** desu."

「どうしてたべないんですか。」
「今食べたくないんです。」

"Why don't you eat?"
"I don't want to eat now."

kiri (1) きり 98

Indicates a limit to an amount (replaceable by dake).

Number + counter + kiri

Asoko ni kuruma ga nidai **kiri** tomatte iru.

あそこに車が二台きり止まっている。

Only two cars are parked there.

Koko ni hon ga sansatsu **kiri** oite aru.

ここに本が三冊きり置いてある。

Only three books have been put here.

Exercise 32 (96–98): Follow the instructions below.

Put ni or noni in the blankets.

1. Oda-san wa hirugohan o tabe ______ uchi e kaerimasu.
小田さんは昼ご飯を食べ ______ うちへ帰ります。
Miss Oda goes home to have lunch.

2. Nihonjin wa taberu ______ hashi o tsukaimasu.
日本人は食べる ______ はしを使います。
Japanese people use chopsticks to eat.

3. Tomodachi ga shashin o mise ______ kita.
友達が写真を見せ ______ 来た。
My friend came to show me the photos.

4. Eigo o miseru ______ kono kyōshitsu o tsukaimasu.
映画を見せる ______ この教室を使います。
We use this classroom to show the movies.

5. Furui shinbun o yomi ______ toshokan e itta.
古い新聞を読み ______ 図書館へ行った。
I went to the library to read old newspapers.

6. Nihongo no shinbun o yomu ______ jisho ga irimasu.
日本語の新聞を読む ______ 辞書が要ります。
I need a dictionary to read Japanese newspapers.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Koko ______ kūkō ______ iku ______ dono ______ kakarimasu ka.
ここ ______ 空港 ______ 行く ______ どの ______ かかりますか。
How long does it take to get from here to the airport?

2. Kēki ______ tsukuru ______ nani ______ irimasu ka.
ケーキ ______ 作る ______ 何 ______ 要りますか。
What do you need to make a cake?

3. Kago ______ naka ______ orenji ga mittsu ______ arimasu.
かご ______ 中 ______ オレンジが三つ ______ あります。
There are only three oranges in the basket.

4. Watashi wa ichido ______ Wada ______ iu hito ______ shokuji ______ shita.

私は一度 ______ 和田 ______ いう人 ______ 食事 ______ した。

I had dinner only once with a person called Wada.

5. "Nani ______ shirabete iru ______ desu ka." "Kono dēta ______ machigai ga atta ______ desu."

「何 ______ 調べている ______ ですか。」「このデータ ______ 間違いがあった ______ です。」

"What are you checking?" "There were some errors in this data."

Indicates the last time a certain incident occured.

kiri (2) きり 99

Pronoun + kiri

Kare ni au no wa kore **kiri** desu.

彼に会うのはこれきりです。

This is the last time I will see him.

Yamada-san wa are **kiri** kimasen.

山田さんはあれきり来ません。

Miss Yamada hasn't come since then.

V-ta + kiri

Oda-san wa Kanada e itta **kiri** kaette kimasen.

小田さんはカナダへ行ったきり帰ってきません。

Mr. Oda went to Canada and has never come back.

Used with numbers and counters to mean "both" or "all."

tomo (1) とも 100

Number + counter + tomo

Kare no kuruma wa nidai **tomo** ōkii.

彼の車は二台とも大きい。

Both of his cars are big.

Watashi-tachi wa sannin **tomo** bengoshi desu.

私達は三人とも弁護士です。

All three of us are lawyers.

101 ながら **nagara** (3)

Used with numbers and counters to mean "both" or "all" (replaceable by tomo).

Number + counter + nagara

Kono ie wa niken **nagara** furui desu.
この家は二軒ながら古いです。
Both of these houses are old.

Musuko wa sannin **nagara** isha da.
息子は三人ながら医者だ。
All of my three sons are doctors.

Exercise 33 (99–101): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Asagohan ______ tabeta ______ nani ______ tabete imasen.
朝ご飯 ______ 食べた ______ 何 ______ 食べていません。
I haven't eaten anything since I had breakfast.

2. Kare wa hachiji ______ ie ______ deta ______ mada kaerimasen.
彼は八時 ______ 家 ______ 出た ______ まだ帰りません。
He hasn't returned since he left house at eight o'clock.

3. Tomu to wa sengetsu Ginza ______ shokuji ______ shita ______ atte imasen.
トムとは先月銀座 ______ 食事 ______ した ______ 会っていません。
I haven't seen Tom since we had dinner in Ginza last month.

4. Hara-san ______ musuko-san wa futari ______ sensei ______ shite imasu.
原さん ______ 息子さんは二人 ______ 先生 ______ しています。
Both of Mrs. Hara's sons are teachers.

5. Watashi ______ yonda hon wa sansatsu ______ rekishi shōsetsu desu.
私 ______ 読んだ本は三冊 ______ 歴史小説です。
All three of the books that I read are historical novels.

6. Jisho ______ shirabeta ______ , kono kanji wa futatsu ______ chigatte imasu.
辞書 ______ 調べた ______ 、この漢字は二つ ______ 違っています。
When I checked in a dictionary, I found both of these kanji are wrong.

Used with a negative verb to indicate limits on conditions or quantities, with the sense of "only."

shika (1) しか 102

Noun/number with counter + shika + negative verb

Miki-san **shika** tabako o suimasen.

三木さんしかたばこを吸いません。

Only Mr. Miki smokes.

Tōsuto o ichimai **shika** tabenakatta.

トーストを一枚しか食べなかった。

I ate only one piece of toast.

Double particles de shika, made shika

Soko e wa basu **de shika** ikemasen.

そこへはバスでしか行けません。

You can go there only by bus.

Mise wa rokuji **made shika** aite imasen.

店は六時までしか開いていません。

The store is only open until six o'clock.

Used in the form "shika nai," indicates a restriction on the verb, with the sense of "to have no choice but to."

shika (2) しか 103

V-u + shika nai

Kyō wa isogashii kara, ashita iku **shika** arimasen.

今日は忙しいから、明日行くしかありません。

Because I'm busy today, I have no choice but to go tomorrow.

Sono koto wa sensei to sōdan suru **shika** nai.

その事は先生と相談するしかない。

As for that matter, you have no choice but to discuss with the teacher.

Used as a conjunction, indicates two or more actions or states.

shi (1) し 104

Verb + shi

Kare wa e mo kaku **shi**, shashin mo torimasu.

彼は絵も描くし、写真もとります。

He paints as well as takes photographs.

Eiga mo mita **shi**, kaimono mo shita.

映画も見たし、買物もした。

I saw a movie and went shopping.

Adjective + shi	Adjectival noun + da + shi
Kono kōto wa yawarakai **shi**, iro mo kirei desu. このコートは柔らかいし、色もきれいです。 This coat is soft and has a pretty color as well.	Koko wa shizuka da **shi**, keshiki mo utsukushii. ここは静かだし、景色も美しい。 This place is quiet, and what's more, the scenery is beautiful.

Exercise 34 (102–104): Follow the instructions below.

A. Select shika or dake for each sentence.

1. Watashi wa wain (shika/dake) nomimasen.
私はワイン（しか・だけ）飲みません。
I drink only wine.

2. Yamada-san (shika/dake) Eigo ga hanasemasu.
山田さん（しか・だけ）英語が話せます。
Only Mr. Yamada can speak English.

3. Soko e wa basu de (shika/dake) ikemasen.
そこへはバスで（しか・だけ）行けません。
You can go there only by bus.

4. Kinō no pātii ni Hara-sensei (shika/dake) kimashita.
昨日のパーティーに原先生（しか・だけ）来ました。
Only Prof. Hara came to yesterday's party.

5. Kono kutsu wa Honkon de (shika/dake) kaemasen.
この靴は香港で（しか・だけ）買えません。
You can buy these shoes only in Hong Kong.

B. Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kyōto ______ ikimashita ______ , Kinkakuji ______ mimasen deshita.
京都 ______ 行きました ______ 、金閣寺 ______ 見ませんでした。
I went to Kyoto, but I saw only Kinkakuji Temple.

2. Doyōbi ______ sūpā ______ niji ______ hatarakimasen.
土曜日 ______ スーパー ______ 二時 ______ 働きません。
As for Saturdays, I work only until two o'clock at the supermarket.

3. Kare ga kuru ______ , koko ______ matsu ______ arimasen.
彼が来る ______ 、ここ ______ 待つ ______ ありません。
I have no choice but to wait here until he comes.

4. Kuruma ga nai ______ , takushii ______ iku ______ nai.
車がない ______ 、タクシー ______ 行く ______ ない。
Having no car, I have no choice but to go by taxi.

5. Kanojo wa piano ______ hiku ______ , uta ______ utaimasu.
彼女はピアノ ______ 弾く ______ 、歌 ______ 歌います。
She plays the piano and sings songs as well.

6. Ryokō ______ iku ______ sūtsu ______ hoshii ______ kutsu ______ hoshii.
旅行 ______ 行く ______ スーツ ______ 欲しい ______ 靴 ______ 欲しい。
I want a suit and shoes as well to go on the trip.

Used as a conjunction, indicates a reason.

shi (2) し

Verb + shi

Ashita shiken ga aru **shi**, konban asobi ni ikemasen.

明日試験があるし、今晩遊びに行けません。

I have an examination tomorrow, so I can't go out (for fun) tonight.

Ame ga futta **shi**, kinō no pikunikku wa tanoshikunakatta.

雨が降ったし、昨日のピクニックは楽しくなかった。

It rained, so yesterday's picnic wasn't enjoyable.

Adjective + shi

Ano mise wa ryōri wa oishii **shi** yasui **shi**, yoku hayatte iru.

あの店は料理はおいしいし安いし、よくはやっている。

That restaurant is very popular, because the food is tasty, and what's more, it's inexpensive.

Adjectival noun + da + shi

Koko wa shizuka da **shi**, yoku nemurareru.

ここは静かだし、よく眠られる。

It's quiet here, so I can sleep well.

106 とも tomo (2)

Indicates inclusion.

Noun + tomo (de)

Gopāsento no tesūryō **tomo** (de) hyakudoru haratta.

5パーセントの手数料とも（で）100ドル払った。

I paid 100 dollars, including a five percent commission.

Zeikin to sābisuryō **tomo** (de) ichiman gosen'en ni narimasu.

税金とサービス料とも（で）一万五千円になります。

It amounts to 15,000 yen, including the tax and service charge.

107 に ni (10)

Indicates the one acting, in a passive or causative-passive sentence, or the one acted upon, in a causative sentence.

Noun (actor) + ni + passive verb

Watashi wa sensei **ni** shikarareta.

私は先生に叱られた。

I was scolded by my teacher.

Kare wa dorobō **ni** jitensha o nusumareta.

彼は泥棒に自転車を盗まれた。

He had his bike stolen by a thief.

Kanojo wa neko **ni** sakana o taberareta.

彼女は猫に魚を食べられた。

She had her fish eaten by a cat.

Noun (acted upon) + ni + causative verb

Sensei wa gakusei **ni** hon o yomaseru.

先生は学生に本を読ませる。

The teacher makes students read books.

Noun (actor) + ni + causative-passive verb

Kare wa tomodachi **ni** sake o nomaserareta.

彼は友達に酒を飲ませられた。

He was made to drink sake by his friends.

Exercise 35 (105–107): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Sanji ______ hima da ______ , doko ka ______ ikimashō ka.

三時 ______ 暇だ ______ 、どこか ______ 行きましょうか。

We are free after three o'clock, so shall we go somewhere?

2. Kono ka wa muzukashii _______ , taisetsu da _______ , nando _______ fukushū shita.

この課は難しい _______ 、大切だ _______ 、何度 _______ 復習した。

Because this chapter is difficult and, moreover, important, I reviewed it many times.

3. Ano resutoran _______ shokuji _______ suru _______ , sābisuryō _______ hitori ichiman'en _______ kakaru.

あのレストラン _______ 食事 _______ する _______ 、サービス料 _______ 一人一万円 _______ かかる。

If you have dinner at that restaurant, it costs as much as 10,000 yen per person including the service charge.

4. Nido _______ shukudai _______ wasureta _______ , sensei _______ shikarareta.

二度 _______ 宿題 _______ 忘れた _______ 、先生 _______ 叱られた。

Because I forgot my homework twice, I was scolded by the teacher.

5. Sensei wa gakusei _______ Nihongo _______ hanasase _______ , kanji _______ kakase _______ suru.

先生は学生 _______ 日本語 _______ 話させ _______ 、漢字 _______ 書かせ _______ する。

The teacher makes students do things like speak in Japanese, write kanji, and so forth.

6. Watashi wa neko _______ chichi _______ tsutta sakana _______ taberareta.

私は猫 _______ 父 _______ 釣った魚 _______ 食べられた。

I had the fish that my father caught eaten by a cat.

7. Watashi-tachi wa kachō _______ rokuji _______ shigoto _______ saserareta.

私達は課長 _______ 六時 _______ 仕事 _______ させられた。

We were made to work until six o'clock by the section chief.

Indicates uncertainty about a state or reason. ka (4) か 108

Verb/adjective + deshō/darō + ka

Sumisu-san wa kuru deshō **ka**.

スミスさんは来るでしょうか。

I wonder if Mr. Smith is coming.

Soto wa samui darō **ka**.

外は寒いだろうか。

I wonder if it's cold outside.

Verb/adjective + no + ka

Shiken ga aru no **ka**—Jimu wa yoku benkyō shite imasu.

試験があるのかジムはよく勉強しています。

I wonder if Jim is going to have an exam. — he's studying hard.

Nedan ga takai no **ka**—kono shinamono wa amari urenai.

値段が高いのかこの品物はあまり売れない。

I wonder if the price is high — this article doesn't sell well.

109 か **ka** (5)

Indicates a question embedded in sentence.

Interrogative + (particle) + verb + ka

Kaigi wa itsu aru **ka** oboete imasen.

会議はいつあるか覚えていません。

I don't remember when the meeting will be held.

Kare wa nanji ni kuru **ka** wakarimasen.

彼は何時に来るか分かりません。

I can't tell what time he'll come.

Verb/adjective + ka + dō + ka

Kare ga kuru **ka** dō **ka** shirimasen.

彼が来るかどうか知りません。

I don't know whether he'll come or not.

Kore ga takai **ka** dō **ka** shiranai.

これが高いかどうか知らない。

I don't know whether this is expensive or not.

110 だの **dano** (1)

Indicates two or more items or actions of a longer list (replaceable by toka).

Noun + dano + noun + dano

Kanojo wa inu **dano** neko **dano** (o) katte iru.

彼女は犬だの猫だの（を）飼っている。

She keeps a dog, a cat, and other animals.

V-u + dano + V-u + dano

Nomu **dano** taberu **dano** odoru **dano** shita.

飲むだの食べるだの踊るだのした。

We did things like drinking, eating, dancing, and so on.

Exercise 36 (108–110): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Asonde ______ ite, kare wa daigaku ______ haireru deshō ______ .
遊んで ______ いて、彼は大学 ______ 入れるでしょう ______ 。
He does nothing but play; I wonder if he can get into college.

2. Mukō no michi ______ jiko ga atta no ______ , kuruma ga nandai ______ kono michi ______ tōru.
向こうの道 ______ 事故があったの ______ 、車が何台 ______ この道 ______ 通る。
I wonder if there's an accident on that street; lots of cars are using (passing along) this street.

3. Yūbe nanji ______ kaisha ______ deta ______ oboete imasen.
昨夜何時 ______ 会社 ______ 出た ______ 覚えていません。
I don't remember what time I left the company last night.

4. Ano mise ______ kēki ga oishii ______ dō ______ shirimasen.
あの店 ______ ケーキがおいしい ______ どう ______ 知りません
I don't know whether the cakes at that store are tasty or not.

5. Watashi wa Wada-san ______ hon ______ kaeshita ______ dō ______ oboete inai.
私は和田さん ______ 本 ______ 返した ______ どう ______ 覚えていない。
I don't remember whether I returned the book to Miss Wada or not.

6. Kanojo wa tori ______ inu ______ neko ______ kau ______ ga suki desu.
彼女は鳥 ______ 犬 ______ 猫 ______ 飼う ______ が好きです。
She likes keeping birds, dogs, and cats.

7. Kodomo-tachi wa dōbutsuen ______ iku ______ kōen ______ asobu ______ shita.
子供達は動物園 ______ 行く ______ 公園 ______ 遊ぶ ______ した。
Children did things like go to the zoo and play in the park.

111 だの dano (2)

Indicates a pair of opposite actions or states.

Verb + dano + verb (negative/opposite) + dano

Kanojo wa iku **dano** ikanai **dano** (to) itte iru.

彼女は行くだの行かないだの（と）言っている。

She says that she's going and then that she's not going.

Adjective + dano + adjective (negative/opposite) + dano

Kare wa samui **dano** atsui **dano** (to) itte soto e demasen.

彼は寒いだの暑いだの（と）言って外へ出ません。

Saying that it's (too) cold, then that it's (too) hot, he doesn't go outside.

112 など nado (2)

Used for the expression "something to the effect" (replaceable by to ka).

Sentence + nado

Kare wa gakkō o yameru **nado** to itte iru.

彼は学校を辞めるなどと言っている。

He says something to the effect that he is quitting school.

Kanojo wa eiga wa tsumaranakatta **nado** to itte ita.

彼女は映画はつまらなかったなどと言っていた。

She said something to the effect that the movie was boring.

113 やら yara (1)

Indicates two or more items of a longer list (replaceable by toka or dano).

Noun + yara + noun + yara

Depāto de kutsu **yara** sētā **yara** takusan katta.

デパートで靴やらセーターやら沢山買った。

I bought a lot of things — shoes, sweaters, and so on — at the department store.

Haha wa kaimono **yara** sōji **yara** de isogashii.

母は買物やら掃除やらで忙しい。

What with shopping, cleaning, and the like, my mother is busy.

Exercise 37 (111–113): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kare wa hikōki ______ Fujisan ______ mieta ______ mienakatta ______ itte ita.

彼は飛行機 ______ 富士山 ______ 見えた ______ 見えなかった ______ 言っていた。

He said that he could, then couldn't see Mt. Fuji from the airplane.

2. Hara-san wa isogashii ______ isogashikunai ______ itte ita ______, kyō kuru ______ dō ______ wakaranai.

原さんは忙しい ______ 忙しくない ______ 言っていた ______ 、今日来る ______ どう ______ 分からない。

Mr. Hara said that he was busy and then that he wasn't, so I can't tell whether he'll come today or not.

3. Gakusei wa kyō ______ shiken ______ kinō no ______ yasashikatta ______ to itte ita.

学生は今日 ______ 試験 ______ 昨日の ______ 易しかった ______ と言っていた。

The students said something to the effect that today's examination was easier than yesterday's.

4. Buchō wa kaigi ______ enkai ______ de kono kinyōbi ______ isogashii.

部長は会議 ______ 宴会 ______ でこの金曜日 ______ 忙しい。

What with meetings, banquets, and so on, the department head is busy until this Friday.

5. Gaikogugo ______ narau ______ , tekisuto ______ , jisho ______ , tēpu ______ takusan iru.

外国語 ______ 習う ______ 、テキスト ______ 、辞書 ______ テープ ______ 沢山要る。

In order to learn foreign languages, we need materials such as texts, dictionaries, and tapes.

114 yara (2) やら

Indicates uncertainty (replaceable by ka).

Interrogative + yara

Hako no naka ni nani **yara** arimasu.

箱の中に何やらあります。

There is something in the box.

Dare **yara** kimashita.

だれやら来ました。

Someone came.

Noun + yara + noun + yara

Ame **yara** kiri **yara** wakarimasen.

雨やら霧やら分かりません。

I can't tell whether it's rain or fog.

Ano hito wa sensei **yara** gakusei **yara** wakaranai.

あの人は先生やら学生やら分からない。

I can't tell whether he is a teacher or a student.

Verb/adj. + yara + verb/adj. (negative/opposite) + yara

Kare wa kuru **yara** konai **yara** shirimasen.

彼は来るやら来ないやら知りません。

I don't know whether he'll come or not.

Sono tsutsumi wa omoi **yara** karui **yara** wakaranai.

その包みは重いやら軽いやら分からない。

I don't know whether the package is heavy or light.

115 ても te mo (4)

Indicates an approximate limit, with the sense of "at the most."

Adj-ku + te mo

Kōgi wa nagaku**te mo** nijikan gurai darō.

講義は長くても二時間ぐらいだろう。

The lecture would last two hours at the most.

Kamera wa takaku**te mo** sanman'en hodo deshō.

カメラは高くても三万円ほどでしょう。

The camera would cost about 30,000 yen at the most.

116 とも tomo (3)

Indicates an approximate maximum or minimum.

Adj-ku + tomo

Kore wa sukunaku **tomo** gosen'en ijō deshō.

これは少なくとも五千円以上でしょう。

This would cost more than 5,000 yen at least.

Gaikoku no baiyā wa ōku **tomo** rokujūnin gurai datta darō.

外国のバイヤーは多くとも六十人ぐらいだっただろう。

The (number of) foreign buyers was about sixty at most.

Exercise 38 (114–116): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ano michi ______ aruite iru ______ wa otoko ______ onna ______ wakaranai.

あの道 ______ 歩いている ______ は男 ______ 女 ______ 分からない。

I can't tell whether the one walking along that road is a man or a woman.

2. Kaigi ga nanji ______ hajimaru ______ dare ______ shirimasen.

会議が何時 ______ 始まる ______ だれ ______ 知りません。

No one knows what time the meeting will start.

3. Kare ______ tsutta sakana ga ōkikatta ______ chiisakatta ______ oboete inai.

彼 ______ 釣った魚が大きかった ______ 小さかった ______ 覚えていない。

I don't remember whether the fish he caught was big or small.

4. Sono kōjō wa tōku ______ koko ______ sanjū-mairu ______ deshō.

その工場は遠く ______ ここ ______ 三十マイル ______ でしょう。

The factory is about 30 miles from here at the most.

5. Kono daigaku ______ Nihongo ______ gakusei wa ōku ______ hyakunin ______ deshō.

この大学 ______ 日本語 ______ 学生は多く ______ 百人 ______ でしょう。

The (number of) students of Japanese in this university is about 100 at most.

6. Kono shigoto ______ sumaseru ______ sukunaku ______ isshūkan kakarimasu.

この仕事 ______ 済ませる ______ 少なく ______ 一週間かかります。

It will take at least a week to finish this work.

Indicates that a number is the highest or lowest limit. wa (3) は

Number + wa

Kono jisho wa ichiman'en **wa** suru.

この辞書は一万円はする。

This dictionary costs at least 10,000 yen.

Kono kabin wa gosen'en **wa** shinai.

この花瓶は五千円はしない。

This flower vase couldn't cost any more than 5,000 yen.

118 と to (7)

Emphasizes a number in a negative sentence.

Number + to + negative verb

Eki made aruite gofun **to** kakaranai.

駅まで歩いて五分とかからない。

It won't take even five minutes to get to the station on foot.

Ano mise de wa nido **to** kaitakunai.

あの店では二度と買いたくない。

I don't want to shop at that store ever again.

119 など nado (3)

Indicates examples.

Noun + nado

Watashi wa bara **nado** suki desu.

私はばらなど好きです。

I like things like roses.

Konban no shokuji wa Furansu ryōri **nado** dō desu ka.

今晩の食事はフランス料理などどうですか。

For tonight's dinner, how about French cusine or something like that?

Exercise 39 (117–119): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kore wa ano mise ______ kae ______ , gohyakuen ______ shinai deshō.
これはあの店 ______ 買え ______ 、五百円 ______ しないでしょう。
If you buy it at that store, it won't cost even 500 yen.

2. Kono tsutsumi wa chiisai desu ______ , jukkiro ______ shimasu.
この包みは小さいです ______ 、10キロ ______ します。
This package is small, but it weighs at least ten kilograms.

3. Ryokō ______ iku ______ , ikkagetsu ______ ikitai.
旅行 ______ 行く ______ 、一か月 ______ 行きたい。
If I go on a trip, I like to go for at least one month.

4. Basu ______ ikeba, hakubutsukan ______ nijuppen ______ kakaranai.
バス ______ 行けば、博物館 ______ 二十分 ______ かからない。
If you go by bus, it won't take even 20 minutes to get to the museum.

5. Kanojo wa asoko e wa nido ______ ikitakunai ______ ii ______ , mata itta.
彼女はあそこへは二度 ______ 行きたくない ______ 言い ______ 、また行った。
Although she said that she'd never go there, she went again.

6. Purezento ______ kau ______ , Imariyaki ______ dō desu ka.
プレゼント ______ 買う ______ 、伊万里焼き ______ どうですか。
If you are to buy a present, how about something like Imari ware?

7. Issho ni shigoto ______ suru ______ , Hara-san ______ ii desu.
一緒に仕事 ______ する ______ 、原さん ______ いいです。
If I'm to work together with someone, I'd like someone like Miss Hara.

Indicates an extent of an action or condition (gurai is more colloquial). kurai (3) くらい 120

Noun + kurai	Verb/adjective + kurai
Hiragana **kurai** yomemasu. ひらがなくらい読めます。 I can read as much as hiragana.	Nodo ga itaku naru **kurai** utatta. のどが痛くなるくらい歌った。 I sang so much that my throat hurt.
Kodomo demo sore **kurai** dekimasu. 子供でもそれくらい出来ます。 Even a child can do that much.	Mada aki na noni mō samui **kurai** da. まだ秋なのにもう寒いくらいだ。 Although it's still autumn, it's almost cold.

121 ほど **hodo** (3)

Indicates the extent of an action or condition (replaceable by kurai/gurai).

Verb/adjective + hodo

Biru wa shinbun ga yomeru **hodo** kanji o shitte iru.

ビルは新聞が読めるほど漢字を知っている。

Bill knows kanji so well, he can read a newspaper.

Okirarenai **hodo** tsukarete imasu.

起きられないほど疲れています。

I'm so tired that I can't get up.

Kaze ga tsuyokute ki ga taoreta **hodo** deshita.

風が強くて木が倒れたほどでした。

The wind was so strong that a tree fell down.

Samukute kōto ga hoshii **hodo** datta.

寒くてコートが欲しいほどだった。

It was so cold that I wanted a coat.

122 ほど **hodo** (4)

Indicates a relationship, with the sense of "the more ... the more..."

V-ba + V-u + hodo

Renshū sureba suru **hodo** jōzu ni naru.

練習すればするほど上手になる。

The more you practice, the better you become.

Adj-kereba + adj-i + hodo

Hayakereba hayai **hodo** ii desu.

早ければ早いほどいいです。

The sooner, the better.

Exercise 40 (120–122): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kodomo ______ sonna koto ______ shitte imasu.

子供 ______ そんな事 ______ 知っています。

Even a child knows as much as that.

2. Jisho ______ areba, kono hon ______ yomemasu.

辞書 ______ あれば、この本 ______ 読めます。

As long as I have a dictionary, I can read something as difficult as this book.

3. Bīru ______ nonda ______ , shinbun ______ yomenai ______ nemuku natta.

ビール ______ 飲んだ ______ 、新聞 ______ 読めない ______ 眠くなった。

I drank beer, so I became so sleepy that I couldn't read the newspaper.

4. Jimu wa Nihonjin ______ hanaseru ______ Nihongo ______ jōzu ______ natta.

ジムは日本人 ______ 話せる ______ 日本語 ______ 上手 ______ なった。

Jim became so good at Japanese that he can speak with a native Japanese.

5. Mire ______ miru ______ sono e ______ hoshiku natta.

見れ ______ 見る ______ その絵 ______ 欲しくなった。

The more I looked at it, the more I wanted the picture.

6. Kore wa chiisakere ______ chiisai ______ tsukau ______ benri desu.

これは小さけれ ______ 小さい ______ 使う ______ 便利です。

The smaller it is, the more convenient it is to use.

Indicates an extent or amount to mean "as … as…"

dake (3) だけ

V-u + dake

Arukeru **dake** aruita.

歩けるだけ歩いた。

I walked as much as I could.

Nihongo wa naraeru **dake** naraitai.

日本語は習えるだけ習いたい。

I want to learn as much Japanese I can.

V-tai/hoshii/suki na + dake

Nomitai **dake** nonda.

飲みたいだけ飲んだ。

I drank as much as I wanted.

Hoshii **dake** totte kudasai.

欲しいだけ取って下さい。

Please take as much as you like.

Suki na **dake** terebi o mita.

好きなだけテレビを見た。

I watched TV as much as I wanted.

124 だけ dake (4)

Indicates a relationship with the sense of "the more... the more..." (replaceable by hodo).

V-ba + V-u + dake

Tabereba taberu **dake** futorimasu.

食べれば食べるだけ太ります。

The more you eat, the fatter you become.

Adj-kerebe + adj-i + dake

Yasukereba yasui **dake** yoku ureru.

安ければ安いだけよく売れる。

The cheaper it is, the better it sells.

125 と to (8)

Used to mean "about to do something" or "trying (often unsuccessfully) to do something."

V-ō/-yō + to + suru

Dekakeyō **to** shita toki, denwa ga natta.

出かけようとした時、電話が鳴った。

When I was about to leave, the telephone rang.

Tatō **to** shita ga tatenakatta.

立とうとしたが立てなかった。

I tried to stand up, but I couldn't.

Neko ga sakana o torō **to** shite iru.

猫が魚を取ろうとしている。

A cat is trying to get the fish.

Exercise 41 (123–125): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kore wa tsukaeru ______ tsukatta ______ , atarashii ______ ga hoshii desu.

これは使える ______ 使った ______ 、新しい ______ が欲しいです。

Because I used this as much as I could, I want a new one.

2. Toshokan ______ hon ______ karitai ______ karite kita.

図書館 ______ 本 ______ 借りたい ______ 借りてきた。

I borrowed as many books as I wanted from the library.

3. Tsuri ______ dekakeru ______ , hayakere ______ hayai ______ ii deshō.

釣り ______ 出かける ______ 、早けれ ______ 早い ______ いいでしょう。

If we are to go fishing, the earlier the better.

4. Kare _______ totta shashin wa mire _______ miru _______ omoshiroi.
彼 _______ とった写真は見れ _______ 見る _______ 面白い。
That photo he took — the more I look at it, the funnier it seems..

5. Heya _______ hairō _______ shita _______ , doa _______ akanakatta.
部屋 _______ 入ろう _______ した _______ 、ドア _______ 開かなかった。
I tried to enter the room but the door didn't open.

6. Densha _______ oriyō _______ shita toki, ushiro _______ dare ka _______ yobareta.
電車 _______ 降りよう _______ した時、後ろ _______ だれか _______ 呼ばれた。
When I was about to get off the train, I was called after by someone.

Lists conditions in spite of which the main verb is true, with the sense of” “even if” or “whether…or not.”

to (9) と

V- ō/-yō + to ... V-ō/-yō + to

Arashi ga koyō **to** kōzui ga koyō **to**, kono ie wa anzen da.

あらしが来ようと洪水が来ようと、この家は安全だ。

Even if a storm comes or a flood comes, this house is safe.

Shōsetsu o kakō **to** shi o kakō **to** kare no hon wa yoku uremasu.

小説を書こうと詩を書こうと、彼の本はよく売れます。

Whether he writes novels or poems, his books sell well.

V-ō/V-yō + to + V-mai + to

Ame ga furō **to** furumai **to**, ikimasu.

雨が降ろうと降るまいと、行きます。

Whether it rains or not, I'll go.

Adj-karō + to + adj-karō + to

Yokarō **to** warukarō **to** kaimasen.

良かろうと悪かろうと買いません。

Whether it's good or bad, I won't buy it.

127 なり nari (1)

Indicates a choice, with the sense of "either..." or "whether...or."

Noun + nari + noun + nari

Oda-san **nari** watashi **nari** ga kaigi ni shusseki shimasu.

小田さんなり私なりが会議に出席します。

Either Mr. Oda or I will attend the meeting.

V-u + nari + V-u + nari

Iku **nari** yameru **nari** hayaku kimemashō.

行くなり止めるなり早く決めましょう。

Let's decide quickly whether we are going or not.

128 なり nari (2)

Used with an interrogative word to mean "anything," "anyone," any time," etc.

Interrogative + nari + to

Nan **nari** to itte kudasai.

何なりと言って下さい。

Please say anything.

Itsu **nari** to kite kudasai.

いつなりと来て下さい。

Please come any time.

Dare **nari** to kikinasai.

だれなりと聞きなさい。

Ask anyone.

Doko **nari** to ikinasai.

どこなりと行きなさい。

Go anywhere.

Exercise 42 (126–128): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Atsukarō ______ samukarō ______ , kodomo-tachi wa kōen ______ asonde iru.
暑かろう ______ 寒かろう ______ 、子供達は公園 ______ 遊んでいる。
Whether it's hot or cold, children are playing in the park.

2. Kachō ______ ikō ______ buchō ______ ikō ______ , watashi wa ikenai.
課長 ______ 行こう ______ 部長 ______ 行こう ______ 、私は行けない。
Even if the section chief or the department head goes, I can't go.

3. Wakaranakere ______ , sensei ni kiku ______ jisho ______ shiraberu ______ nasai.
分からなけれ ______ 、先生に聞く ______ 辞書 ______ 調べる ______ なさい。
If you don't understand, ask your teacher or check in a dictionary.

4. Sono koto ______ , Oda-san ______ Miki-san ______ ni itte kudasai.

その事 ______ 、小田さん ______ 三木さん ______ に言って下さい。

As for this matter, please tell either Mr. Oda or Mr. Miki.

5. Kono shigoto wa hitori ______ dekiru ______ , itsu ______ to kaette kudasai.

この仕事は一人 ______ 出来る ______ 、いつ ______ と帰って下さい。

I can do this work by myself, so please go home any time.

6. Kono naka ______ dore ______ to suki na ______ o torinasai.

この中 ______ どれ ______ と好きな ______ を取りなさい。

Take whichever you like among these.

Emphasizes the word preceding it.

koso (1) こそ 129

Noun + koso

Rainen **koso** Igirisu e ikitai desu.

来年こそイギリスへ行きたいです。

Next year for sure, I'd like to go to England.

Sumisu-san **koso** gorufu ga jōzu desu.

スミスさんこそゴルフが上手です。

Mr. Smith is a good golfer indeed.

Double particles de koso, to koso

Kare wa Nihon **de koso** yūmei desu.

彼は日本でこそ有名です。

Japan is certainly a place he is famous.

Hara-san **to koso** tenisu o shitai.

原さんとこそテニスをしたい。

Miss Hara is the very person I want to play tennis with.

Emphasizes a reason or cause.

koso (2) こそ 130

V-ba/adj-kereba + koso

O-kane ga ireba **koso**, yoru mo hataraite iru no desu.

お金が要ればこそ、夜も働いているのです。

It's because I really need the money that I'm working nights as well.

Wakakereba **koso**, anna kiken na koto ga dekiru no da.

若ければこそ、あんな危険な事が出来るのだ。

It's only because he's young that he can do such a dangerous thing.

Sentence + kara + koso

Sono mise wa sābisu ga ii kara **koso,** o-kyaku ga ōi n desu.

その店はサービスがいいからこそ、お客が多いんです。

It precisely because the service in that store is so good that it has a lot of customers.

Kanojo wa yoku benkyō shita kara **koso,** daigaku ni haireta no desu.

彼女はよく勉強したからこそ、大学に入れたのです。

Her diligent study was what got her into college.

131 ては **te wa** (2)

Indicates repetition of an action.

V-te + wa

Kare wa keiba ni it**te wa** kane o nakushite iru.

彼は競馬に行っては金をなくしている。

Every time he goes to a horse race, he loses money.

V-te + wa ... V-te + wa + suru

Gakusei ga kokuban ni kanji o kai**te wa** keshi, kai**te wa** keshi shite iru.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いては消し、書いては消ししている。

The student writes kanji on the blackboard, erases them, then writes and erases them again.

Exercise 43 (129–131): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kore ______ watashi ______ nani ______ hoshikatta mono desu.

これ ______ 私 ______ 何 ______ 欲しかった物です。

It is the very thing that I wanted more than anything.

2. Shiken ga owatta ______ , konban ______ asobi ______ ikitai.

試験が終わった ______ 、今晩 ______ 遊び ______ 行きたい。

The examination is over, so I would like to go out for fun tonight for sure.

3. Tōkyō ______ oishii sushi ______ taberareru.

東京 ______ おいしいすし ______ 食べられる。

Tokyo is certainly a place where you can eat good sushi.

4. Bosu ______ byōki ______ ikenakatta kara ______ , watashi ______ itta n desu.

ボス ______ 病気 ______ 行けなかったから ______ 、私 ______ 行ったんです。

It was because my boss couldn't go due to an illness that I went.

5. Daigaku ______ hairitakereba ______ , kare wa ichinichi ______ nanjikan ______ benkyō shite iru no desu.

大学 ______ 入りたければ ______ 、彼は一日 ______ 何時間 ______ 勉強しているのです。

It is only because he wants to get into college that he studies many hours a day.

6. Kanojo wa toshokan ______ it ______ hon ______ nansatsu ______ karite kuru.

彼女は図書館 ______ 行っ ______ 本 ______ 何冊 ______ 借りてくる。

Every time she goes to the library, she takes out many books.

ni (11) に 132

Joins two or more nouns to indicate a list of items (replaceable by to).

Noun + ni + noun

Shussekisha wa Wada-san **ni** Hara-san deshita.

出席者は和田さんに原さんでした。

Those present were Mr. Wada and Miss Hara.

Enkai de wain **ni** uisukii **ni** sake ga deta.

宴会でワインにウイスキーに酒が出た。

At the banquet, wine, whisky, and sake were served.

ni (12) に 133

Connects two or more items to indicate a matching or contrasting.

Noun + ni + noun

Romeo **ni** Jurietto

ロメオにジュリエット

Romeo and Juliet.

midori no matsu **ni** aoi sora

緑の松に青い空

the green pines and the blue sky

Fuji-san **ni** sakura

富士山に桜

Mt. Fuji and cherry blossoms

kuro no sūtsu **ni** kuro no nekutai

黒のスーツに黒のネクタイ

a black suit and a black tie

にしては ni shite wa (1)

Indicates a generally agreed upon standard.

Noun + ni shite wa

Kare wa Amerika-jin **ni shite wa** se ga hikui.

彼はアメリカ人にしては背が低い。

He's short for an American.

Verb + ni shite wa

Yoku nomu **ni shite wa** yowanai.

よく飲むにしては酔わない。

Considering that he drinks a lot, he doesn't get drunk.

Exercise 44 (132–134): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kanji ______ yomeru ______ wa Tomu ______ Jimu ______ Sara desu.

   漢字 ______ 読める ______ はトム ______ ジム ______ サラです。

   Those who can read kanji are Tom, Jim and Sarah.

2. Watashi ______ tsukutta ningyō wa kore ______ sore desu.

   私 ______ 作った人形はこれ ______ それです。

   The dolls that I made are this one and that one.

3. Akai sētā ______ kuroi sukāto ______ onna no ko ______ kuruma ______ orita.

   赤いセーター ______ 黒いスカート ______ 女の子 ______ 車 ______ 降りた。

   A girl in a red sweater and a black skirt got out of the car.

4. Kabe ______ Fujisan ______ sakura ______ e ______ hatte arimasu.

   壁 ______ 富士山 ______ 桜 ______ 絵 ______ はってあります。

   A picture of Mt. Fuji and cherry blossoms is pasted to the wall.

5. Yamada-san wa Nihonjin ______ Eigo ______ jōzu desu.

   山田さんは日本人 ______ 英語 ______ 上手です。

   For a Japanese, Mr. Yamada is good at English.

6. Kare wa jūen Nihon ______ ita ______ Nihongo ______ amari hanasenai.

   彼は十年日本 ______ いた ______ 日本語 ______ あまり話せない。

   Considering that he was in Japan ten years, he can't speak Japanese very well.

Indicates an effect on or value of a person or thing.

ni totte (1) にとって

Noun + ni totte

Yasai wa karada **ni totte** ii desu.

野菜は体にとっていいです。

Vegetables are good for the body.

Sono eiga wa kodomo **ni totte** yokunai to omoimasu.

その映画は子供にとって良くないと思います。

I think that movie is not good for children.

Double particles ni totte wa, ni totte mo

Kono zasshi wa dansei **ni totte wa** yaku ni tatsu.

この雑誌は男性にとっては役に立つ。

This magazine is useful for men (but not for women).

Kono gēmu wa otona **ni totte mo** omoshiroi desu.

このゲームは大人にとっても面白いです。

This game is fun for adults, too.

Used to indicate "about" or "concerning" something or someone.

ni tsuite (1) について

Noun + ni tsuite

Nihon no keizai **ni tsuite** hanashite kudasai.

日本の経済について話して下さい。

Please talk about the Japanese economy.

Kyō no kōgi **ni tsuite** nani ka shitsumon ga arimasuka.

今日の講義について何か質問がありますか?

Are there any questions about today's lecture?

Double particles ni tsuite no, ni tsuite wa

Tōshi **ni tsuite no** hon ga takusan dete iru.

投資についての本が沢山出ている。

Many books about investments are out.

Kono ken **ni tsuite wa** tsugi no kaigi de sōdan shimashō.

この件については次の会議で相談しましょう。

Concerning this matter, let's discuss it at next meeting.

137 とも tomo (4)

Paired and used with a negative form of iu, to mean "can't say whether…or…"

Noun + tomo + noun + tomo

Kono sakuhin wa kessaku **tomo** dasaku **tomo** iemasen.

この作品は傑作とも駄作とも言えません。

I can't tell whether this work is a masterpiece or trash.

Kono shinju wa honmono **tomo** nisemono **tomo** ienai.

この真珠は本物とも、にせ物とも言えない。

I can't tell whether this pearl is the real thing or an imitation.

Verb/Adj. + tomo + verb/adj + tomo

Bukka ga agaru **tomo** sagaru **tomo** iemasen.

物価が上がるとも下がるとも言えません。

I can't say whether prices will go up or go down.

Sono geki wa ii **tomo** warui **tomo** ienai

その劇はいいとも悪いとも言えない。

I can't say whether the play is good or bad

Exercise 45 (135–137): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Gaikokujin ______ kanji ______ kaku ______ wa muzukashii.

外国人 ______ 漢字 ______ 書く ______ は難しい。

Writing kanji is difficult for foreigners.

2. Karui undō wa otona ______ kodomo ______ taisetsu desu.

軽い運動は大人 ______ 子供 ______ 大切です。

Light exercise is important both for adults and children.

3. Kare wa suraido ______ mise ______ , ryōkō ______ hanashita.

彼はスライド ______ 見せ ______ 、旅行 ______ 話した。

He talked about his trip while showing the slides.

4. Kono tōshi ______ Miki-san ______ sōdan suru ______ ga ichiban ii darō.

この投資 ______ 三木さん ______ 相談する ______ が一番いいだろう。

Concerning this investment, it's best to consult with Mr. Kiki.

5. Kono hon wa katta ______ da ______ , mada ii ______ warui ______ iemasen.

この本は買った ______ だ ______ 、まだいい ______ 悪い ______ 言えません。

I just bought this book, so I can't say yet whether it's good or bad.

6. Kore wa nando ______ yonda ______ , shi ______ shōsetsu ______ ieanai.

これは何度 ______ 読んだ ______ 、詩 ______ 小説 ______ 言えない。

I read this many times, but I can't tell whether it's a poem or a story.

138 ga (6) が

Lists conditions in spite of which the main verb is true, with the sense of "even if" or whether…or not" (replaceable by to).

V-ō /-yō + ga … V-ō/-yō + ga

Ame ga furō **ga** yuki ga furō **ga**, watashi wa ikimasu.

雨が降ろうが雪が降ろうが、私は行きます。

Even if it rains or snows, I'll go.

Shikenga arō **ga** shukudai ga arō **ga**, ano gakusei wa benkyō shinai.

試験があろうが宿題があろうが、あの学生は勉強しない。

Even if he has examinations or homework, that student doesn't study.

V-ō/-yō + ga + V-mai + ga

Kare ga koyō **ga** komai **ga**, kaigi o hajimemashō.

彼が来ようが来まいが、会議を始めましょう。

Whether he comes or not, let's start the meeting.

Adj-karō + ga + adj-karō + ga

Heya ga hirokarō **ga** semakarō **ga** kamaimasen.

部屋が広かろうが狭かろうがかまいません。

It doesn't matter whether the room is large or small.

139 wa (4) は

Emphasizes contrasting elements.

V(-masu) + wa + suru

Bā de nomi **wa** shita ga, shokuji ni wa ikanakatta.

バーで飲みはしたが、食事には行かなかった。

We did drink at the bar, but didn't go out for dinner.

V-te + wa + iru

Kamera o motte **wa** iru ga, mada tsukatte (wa) inai.

カメラを持ってはいるが、まだ使って（は）いない。

I do have a camera, but haven't used it yet.

140 として toshite (1)

Indicates status, capacity, or function.

Noun + toshite

Kare wa tsūyaku **toshite** yatowareta.
彼は通訳として雇われた。
He was hired as an interpreter.

Kono heya wa shosai **toshite** tsukatte ir
この部屋は書斎として使っている。
I'm using this room as a study.

Exercises 46 (138–140): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kare ga koyō ______ komai ______ , sanji ______ koko ______ machimashō.
彼が来よう ______ 来まい ______ 、三時 ______ ここ ______ 待ちましょう。
Whether he comes or not, let's wait here until three o'clock.

2. Takakarō ______ yasukarō ______ , iru ______ kainasai.
高かろう ______ 安かろう ______ 、要る ______ 買いなさい。
Whether it's expensive or inexpensive, buy it if you need it.

3. Jimu wa kanji ______ yome ______ shimasu ga, kake ______ shimasen.
ジムは漢字 ______ 読め ______ しますが、書け ______ しません。
Jim can read kanji, but he can't write them.

4. Kare ______ hanashi ______ shita ga, sanjuppun ______ hanasanakatta.
彼 ______ 話し ______ したが、三十分 ______ 話さなかった。
I did talk with him, but only for 30 minutes.

5. Kanojo wa ueitoresu ______ hataraki ______ kono shōsetsu ______ kaita.
彼女はウエイトレス ______ 働き ______ この小説 ______ 書いた。
She wrote this novel while working as a waitress.

6. Tsukue ______ nai ______ , kono hako ______ tsukue ______ tsukatte imasu.
机 ______ ない ______ 、この箱 ______ 机 ______ 使っています。
Because there's no desk, I'm using this box as a desk.

toshite (2) として 141

Provides emphasis in a negative sentence (replaceable by mo).

One + counter + toshite + negative verb

Kono mise ni wa hitotsu **toshite** yasui mono wa nai.

この店には一つとして安い物はない。

There isn't a single item that is inexpensive in this store.

Kare wa ichido **toshite** gaikoku e itta koto wa nai.

彼は一度として外国へ行ったことはない。

He's never been even once to a foreign country.

bakari (4) ばかり 142

In the form "bakari de naku," used to express "not only ... but also."

Noun + bakari de naku...mo

Kare wa Eigo **bakari** de naku Doitsu-go mo hanasu.

彼は英語ばかりでなくドイツ語も話す。

He speaks not only English but also German.

Gakusei **bakari** de naku sensei mo tenrankai ni itta.

学生ばかりでなく先生も展覧会に行った。

Not only students but also teachers went to the exhibition.

Verb + bakari de naku...mo

Piano o hiku **bakari** de naku e mo kaku.

ピアノを弾くばかりでなく絵も描く。

She not only plays the piano but also does paintings.

Adjective + bakari de naku...mo

Kono heya wa hiroi **bakari** de naku tenjō mo takai.

この部屋は広いばかりでなく天井も高い。

This room is not only large but also has a high ceiling.

143 だけ **dake** (5)

In the form "dake de naku," used to express "not only…but also" (replaceable by bakari).

Noun + dake de naku…mo

Niku **dake** de naku sakana mo katta.

肉だけでなく魚も買った。

I bought not only beef but also fish.

Kago no naka ni ringo **dake** de naku orenji mo aru.

かごの中にりんごだけでなくオレンジもある。

There are not only apples but also oranges in the basket.

Verb + dake de naku…mo

Kare wa oyogu **dake** de naku tenisu mo suru.

彼は泳ぐだけでなくテニスもする。

He not only swims but also plays tennis.

Adjective + dake de naku…mo

Sono ryōri wa oishii **dake** de naku nedan mo yasui.

その料理はおいしいだけでなく値段も安い。

The food is not only tasty, but also the price is reasonable.

144 のみ **nomi** (2)

In the form "nomi narazu," used to express "not only…but also" (replaceable by bakari/dake de naku).

Noun + nomi narazu…mo

Kaiga **nomi** narazu chōkoku mo mita.

絵画のみならず彫刻も見た。

I saw not only paintings but also sculptures.

Dansei **nomi** narazu josei mo kono kurabu ni haitte iru.

男性のみならず女性もこのクラブに入っている。

Not only men but also women are members of this club.

Verb + nomi narazu…mo

Kare wa benkyō suru **nomi** narazu undō mo suru.

彼は勉強するのみならず運動もする。

He not only studies but also exercises.

Adjective + nomi narazu … mo

Kono kawa wa fukai **nomi** narazu mizu mo kirei da.

この川は深いのみならず水もきれいだ。

This river is not only deep, but the water is clear.

Exercise 47 (141–144): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kesa ______ kuruma wa ichidai ______ kono michi ______ tōtte imasen.
今朝 ______ 車は一台 ______ この道 ______ 通っていません。
Not a single car has passed along this street since this morning.

2. Kare wa hon o nansatsu ______ katta ______ , mada issatsu ______ yonde inai.
彼は本を何冊 ______ 買った ______ 、まだ一冊 ______ 読んでいない。
Although he bought many books, he hasn't yet read even one.

3. Kanojo wa daigaku ______ Eigo ______ de naku Furansu-go ______ oshieta.
彼女は大学 ______ 英語 ______ でなくフランス語 ______ 教えた。
She taught not only English but also French at a college.

4. Kono kuruma wa enjin ______ ii ______ de naku sutairu ______ ii.
この車はエンジン ______ いい ______ でなくスタイル ______ いい。
This car has not only a good engine but also good style.

5. Watashi wa haha ______ barē ______ narazu piano ______ narawaserareta.
私は母 ______ バレー ______ ならずピアノ ______ 習わせられた。
I was made to learn not only ballet but also piano by my mother.

6. Gakusei ______ narazu sensei ______ sono kōgi ______ shusseki shita.
学生 ______ ならず先生 ______ その講義 ______ 出席した。
Not only students but also teachers attended the lecture.

Used to express "as soon as."

nari (3) なり

V-u + nari

Asagohan o taberu **nari**, ie o deta.
朝ご飯を食べるなり、家を出た。
As soon as I ate breakfast, I left the house.

Mise o deru **nari,** takushii ni notta.
店を出るなり、タクシーに乗った。
As soon as I left the store, I got in a taxi.

146 が ga (7)

In the form "... ga hayai ka," used to express "as soon as."

V-u + ga hayai ka

Heya ni hairu **ga** hayai ka, dentō o tsuketa.

部屋に入るが早いか、電灯をつけた。

As soon as I entered the room, I turned on the light.

Ame ga yamu **ga** hayai ka, shiai ga hajimatta.

雨が止むが早いか、試合が始まった。

As soon as the rain stopped, the game began.

147 や ya (2)

In the form "...ya ina ya," used to express "as soon as."

V-u + ya ina ya

Okiru **ya** ina **ya**, mado o aketa.

起きるやいなや、窓を開けた。

As soon as I got up, I opened the window.

Kare wa keikan o miru **ya** ina **ya**, nigeta.

彼は警官を見るやいなや、逃げた。

As soon as he saw a policeman, he ran away.

148 か ka (6)

In the form "ka...nai uchi ni," used to express "no sooner had," or "hardly had."

V-u + ka + V-nai uchi ni

Ofisu ni hairu **ka** hairanai uchi ni denwa ga natta.

オフィスに入るか入らないうちに電話が鳴った。

No sooner had I entered the office than the phone rang.

Jugyō ga owaru **ka** owaranai uchi ni gakusei wa tachiagatta.

授業が終わるか終わらないうちに学生は立ち上がった。

No sooner had the class ended than the students stood up.

Exercise 48 (145–148): Follow the directions below.

A. Change nari to ga or ya and rewrite the sentences.

1. Ginza de takushii o oriru nari, resutoran ni haitta.
銀座でタクシーを降りるなり、レストランに入った。
As soon as I got out of the taxi in Ginza, I entered a restaurant.

2. Kūkō ni tsuku nari, Wada-san ni denwa shimashita.
空港に着くなり、和田さんに電話しました。
As soon as I arrived at the airport, I phoned Mr. Wada.

3. Asa okiru nari, o-furo ni hairimashita.
朝起きるなり、お風呂に入りました。
As soon as I got up in the morning, I took a bath.

B. Select a correct particle for each sentence.

1. Kare wa kaigi ga owaru (ga/ka/ya) owaranai uchi ni heya o deta.
彼は会議が終わる（が・か・や）終わらないうちに部屋を出た。
No sooner had the meeting ended than he left the room.

2. Kōdō ni hairu (ga/ka/ya) hayai (ga/ka/ya), kōgi ga hajimatta.
講堂に入る（が・か・や）早い（が・か・や）、講義が始まった。
As soon as I entered the auditorium, the lecture started.

3. Mado o akeru (ga/ka/ya) akenai uchi ni tori ga tobikonde kita.
窓を開ける（が・か・や）開けないうちに鳥が飛び込んできた。
No sooner had I opened the window than a bird flew into the house.

4. Kanojo wa watashi o miru (ga/ka/ya) ina (ga/ka/ya), namae o yonda.
彼女は私を見る（が・か・や）いな（が・か・や）、名前を呼んだ。
As soon as she saw me, she called out my name.

149 ばかり bakari (5)

Indicates the only action left to do.

V-u + bakari

Mō hikkoshi o suru **bakari** desu.

もう引っ越しをするばかりです。

The only thing left for us to do is to move. (We are ready to move.)

150 ばかり bakari (6)

In the form "bakari ni," emphasizes a reason or cause.

Verb + bakari ni

Kaze o hiita **bakari** ni, gaishutsu dekinai.

風邪をひいたばかりに、外出出来ない。

Just because I caught a cold, I can't go out.

Shukudai o wasureta **bakari** ni, sensei ni shikarareta.

宿題を忘れたばかりに、先生に叱られた。

Because I forgot my homework, I was scolded by my teacher.

Adj/adjectival noun + bakari ni

Michi ga semai **bakari** ni, basu wa tōrenai.

道が狭いばかりに、バスは通れない。

Because the street is narrow, buses can't get through.

Kanojo wa uta ga jōzu na **bakari** ni, yoku utawaserareru.

彼女は歌が上手なばかりに、よく歌わせられる。

Because she is good at singing, she is made to sing often.

151 すら sura (1)

Adds emphasis, with the sense of "even" (replaceable by sae).

Noun/gerund + sura

Akanbō (de) **sura** oyogemasu.

赤ん坊（で）すら泳げます。

Even a baby can swim.

Tomu wa muzukashii kanji **sura** yomeru.

トムは難しい漢字すら読める。

Tom can read even difficult kanji.

Isogashikute taberu koto **sura** dekinai.

忙しくて食べることすら出来ない。

I am so busy that I can't even eat.

Exercise 49 (149–151): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Shigoto ga owatta ______ , mō kaeru ______ desu.
仕事が終わった ______ 、もう帰る ______ です。
Because my work is done, I'm ready to go home now.

2. Dekakeru ______ da ______ , takushii ______ yonde kudasai.
出かける ______ だ ______ 、タクシー ______ 呼んで下さい。
I'm ready to leave, so please call a taxi for me.

3. Kare wa atarashii kuruma ______ hoshii ______ ni, yoru ______ hataraite iru.
彼は新しい車 ______ 欲しい ______ に、夜 ______ 働いている。
It's because he wants a new car that he's working nights as well.

4. Samui hi ______ sakkā o mi ______ itta ______ ni, kaze o hiite shimatta.
寒い日 ______ サッカーを見 ______ 行った ______ に、風邪をひいてしまった。
I caught a cold, just because I went to watch soccer on a cold day.

5. Sannen ______ Eigo ______ naratta ______ , yasashii koto ______ ienai.
三年 ______ 英語 ______ 習った ______ 、易しい事 ______ 言えない。
Although I studied English as many as three years, I can't even say simple things.

6. Jisho ______ areba, Tomu wa Nihongo ______ repōto o kaku koto ______ dekiru.
辞書 ______ あれば、トムは日本語 ______ レポートを書くこと ______ 出来る。
If he has a dictionary, Tom can even write a report in Japanese.

Indicates a deprecatory or humble attitude toward the item in question.

nado (4) など

152

Noun + nado

Watashi **nado**, totemo kore wa yakusemasen.

私など、とてもこれは訳せません。

Someone like me could never translate this.

Sonna takai mono **nado** totemo kaenai.

そんな高い物などとても買えない。

I could never buy such an expensive thing.

153 とも tomo (5)

Adds emphasis, with the sense of "no matte
what" or "even if."

V- ō/-yō + tomo

Nani ga okorō **tomo**, saigo made ganbarō.

何が起ろうとも、最後まで頑張ろう。

No matter what will happen, let's do our best to the end.

Kare ga yameyō **tomo**, kono kikaku wa kawaranai.

彼が辞めようとも、この企画は変わらない。

Even if he should resign, this plan won't change.

154 とも tomo (6)

In the form "tomo arō hito," indicates someone who has acted contrary to a general opinion about him or her.

Noun (person) + tomo arō hito

Keikan **tomo** arō hito ga nusumi o shita.

警官ともあろう人が盗みをした。

Although he is supposed to be a policeman, he stole something.

Exercise 50 (152–154): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Watashi ______ yasui sararii ______ ie ______ totemo kaemasen.

私 ______ 安いサラリー ______ 家 ______ とても買えません。

With my small salary, I could never buy anything like a house.

2. Oda-san ______ totemo buchō ______ narenai ______ omoimasu.

小田さん ______ とても部長 ______ なれない ______ 思います。

I think that someone like Mr. Oda could never make a department head.

3. Dare ______ ai ______ koyō ______ , sanji ______ isogashikute aemasen.

だれ ______ 会い ______ 来よう ______ 、三時 ______ 忙しくて会えません。

No matter who comes to see me, I'm too busy to see anyone till three o'clock.

4. Kachō ______ yakusoku da ______ , ashita ame ga furō ______ tsuri ______ iku.

課長 ______ 約束だ ______ 、明日雨が降ろう ______ 釣り ______ 行く。

Because I promised the section chief, I'll go fishing tomorrow even if it rains.

5. Daigaku ______ gakuchō ______ arō hito ga sukyandaru ______ yamesaserareta.
大学 ______ 学長 ______ あろう人がスキャンダル ______ 辞めさせられた。
Although he was president of the university, he was forced out due to the scandal.

Used to express "far from" or "not to mention." dokoro ka (1) どころか 155

Noun + dokoro ka ... mo

Kare wa ie **dokoro ka** kuruma mo nai.
彼は家どころか車もない。
He doesn't even have a car, not to mention a house.

V-u + dokoro ka

Yoku hataraku **dokoro ka** asonde bakari iru.
よく働くどころか遊んでばかりいる。
Far from working hard, he does nothing but play.

Adj./adjectival noun + dokoro ka

Heya wa hiroi **dokoro ka** semasugiru.
部屋は広いどころか狭すぎる。
Far from being large, the room is too small.

Kore wa kantan **dokoro ka** totemo fukuzatsu da.
これは簡単どころかとても複雑だ。
Far from being simple, this is very complicated.

Indicates a cause or reason. dake ni (1) だけに 156

Noun + dake ni

Ichiryū no gaka **dake ni** kanojo no e wa subarashii.
一流の画家だけに、彼女の絵は素晴らしい。
As you might expect of a first-rate painter, her paintings are wonderful.

Adjective/verb + dake ni

Kore wa chiisai **dake ni**, tsukaiyasui.
これは小さいだけに、使いやすい。
Because this is small, it's easy to use.

Yoku doryoku shita **dake ni**, seiseki ga agatta.
よく努力しただけに、成績が上がった。
Since he tried hard, his grades went up.

157 まで made (3)

In the form "made mo nai," provides negative emphasis, with the sense of "there's no need to…"

V-u + made mo nai

Kono repōto wa yomu **made** mo nai.
このレポートは読むまでもない。
There is no need to read this report.

Exercises 51 (155–157): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Soko ______ iku ______ , ichijikan ______ sanjikan ______ kakatta.
そこ ______ 行く ______ 、一時間 ______ 三時間 ______ かかった。
Far from one hour, it took me as long as three hours to get there.

2. Kare ______ kaita shōsetsu wa omoshiroi ______ totemo tsumaranai.
彼 ______ 書いた小説は面白い ______ とてもつまらない。
The novel that he wrote is far from interesting, in fact, it's quite boring.

3. Biru wa shiken ______ aru ______ , benkyō suru ______ asonde ______ iru.
ビルは試験 ______ ある ______ 、勉強する ______ 遊んで ______ いる。
Although he'll have examinations, far from studying; Bill is doing nothing but playing.

4. Kanojo wa Chūgoku ______ nannen ______ sunde ita ______ ,
Chūgokugo ______ yoku hanaseru.
彼女は中国 ______ 何年 ______ 住んでいた ______ 、中国語 ______ よく話せる。
Because she lived in China many years, she can speak Chinese well.

5. Watashi ______ ie wa sūpā ______ tōi ______ , kaimono ______ fuben desu.
私 ______ 家はスーパー ______ 遠い ______ 、買物 ______ 不便です。
Because my house is far from the supermarket, it's inconvenient for shopping.

6. Kore ga mada tsukaeru ______ , atarashii ______ o kau ______ mo nai.
これがまだ使える ______ 、新しい ______ を買う ______ もない。
If we can still use this, there's no need to buy a new one.

mono no (1) ものの

158

Used as a conjunction to mean "but" or "although" (replaceable by ga).

Verb + mono no

Sekkyō suru **mono no,** jikkō wa muzukashii

説教するものの、実行は難しい。

Although you may preach, it is difficult to practice.

Kore o katta **mono no**, tsukaikata ga yoku wakaranai.

これを買ったものの、使い方がよく分からない。

I bought this, but don't know very well how to use it.

tokoro de (1) ところで

159

Used as a conjunction to mean "even if."

V-ta + tokoro de

Shōtai shita **tokoro de**, kare wa konai darō.

招待したところで、彼は来ないだろう。

Even if we invited him, he wouldn't come.

Isoida **tokoro de**, ma ni aimasen.

急いだところで、間に合いません。

Even if we hurry, we won't be in time.

keredomo (1) けれども

160

Connects two sentences, with the meaning "but," or "although" (replaceable by ga).

Sentence + keredomo + Sentence

Tomu wa kuru **keredomo** Jimu wa konai.

トムは来るけれどもジムは来ない。

Tom is coming but Jim is not.

Tenki wa ii **keredomo** kaze ga aru.

天気はいいけれども風がある。

The weather is good but it's windy.

Exercise 52 (158–160): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Ryokō suru koto ______ kimeta ______ , doko ______ iku ______ mada wakaranai.
旅行すること ______ 決めた ______ 、どこ ______ 行く ______ まだ分からない。
Although I decided to travel, I don't know where to go yet.

2. Kare wa daigaku ______ haitta ______ , ichinen ______ yamete, gaikoku ______ itta.
彼は大学 ______ 入った ______ 、一年 ______ 辞めて、外国 ______ 行った。
Although he entered college, he quit in one year and went abroad.

3. Denwa ______ chūmon shita ______ , kuru ______ isshūkan ______ kakaru deshō.
電話 ______ 注文した ______ 、来る ______ 一週間 ______ かかるでしょう。
Even if I order it by phone, it would take at least a week to come.

4. Ima itta ______ , kare wa goji ______ shigoto ______ isogashii darō.
今行った ______ 、彼は五時 ______ 仕事 ______ 忙しいだろう。
Even if I go now, he'll be busy with his work until five o'clock.

5. Sētā ______ kai ______ itta ______ , hoshii ______ wa mō urete ita.
セーター ______ 買い ______ 行った ______ 、欲しい ______ はもう売れていた。
I went to buy a sweater but the one I wanted was sold already.

161 けれども keredomo (2)

Indicates a preliminary remark (replaceable by ga).

Sentence + keredomo

Oda desu **keredomo**, Hara-san wa irasshaimasu ka.

小田ですけれども、原さんはいらっしゃいますか。

I'm Oda. Is Miss Hara here?

Ano ken desu **keredomo**, dōshimashō k

あの件ですけれども、どうしましょうか。

Speaking of that matter, what shall we do?

Used to soften a statement or refusal.

ga (8) が 162

Sentence + ga

Daijōbu da to omoimasu **ga**.

大丈夫だと思いますが。

I think it will be all right.

Kachō wa ima kaigichū desu **ga**.

課長は今会議中ですが。

The section chief is now in the meeting (he's not available).

Indicates a desire (replaceable by ga).

keredomo (3) けれども 163

Sentence + keredomo

Mō sukoshi chiisai no ga hoshii no desu **keredomo.**

もう少し小さいのが欲しいのですけれども。

I'd like something a little smaller.

Pari e ikitai n da **keredomo.**

パリへ行きたいんだけれども。

I wish I could go to Paris.

Exercise 53 (161–163): Put appropriate particles in the blanks.

1. Kono kikaku ______ koto desu ______ , kachō ga yame ______ yaru no desu ka.

この企画 ______ 事です ______ 、課長が辞め ______ やるのですか。

Speaking of this plan, are we going to do it even if the section chief should resign?

2. "Yamada desu ______ , Wada-san wa irasshaimasu ka."
"Sanjuppun mae ______ shokuji ______ demashita ______ ."

「山田です ______ 、和田さんはいらっしゃいますか。」
「三十分前 ______ 食事 ______ 出ました ______ 。」

"I'm Yamada. Is Mr. Wada in?" "He left for lunch 30 minutes ago."

3. "Oda-san wa nanji ______ koraremasu ka."
"Kuji ______ kuru ______ omoimasu ______ ."

「小田さんは何時 ______ 来られますか。」「九時 ______ 来る ______ 思います ______ 。」

"What time will Mr. Oda come?" "He'll come by nine o'clock, I think."

4. Natsuyasumi ______ yama ______ umi ______ ikitai no desu ______ .

夏休み ______ 山 ______ 海 ______ 行きたいのです ______ 。

During summer vacation I'd like to go to the mountains, the sea, or somewhere.

5. Dekire ______ , Tōkyo ______ sannen ______ benkyō shitai n da ______ .

出来れ ______ 、東京 ______ 三年 ______ 勉強したいんだ ______ 。

If possible, I'd like to study in Tokyo for about three years.

164 ね ne (1)

A sentence-final particle, used for confirmation of a statement.

Sentence + ne

Samui desu **ne**.

寒いですね。

It's cold, isn't it?

Opera wa subarashikatta desu **ne**.

オペラは素晴らしかったですね。

The opera was splendid, wasn't it?

165 ね ne (2)

A sentence-final particle, used to soften a request or suggestion.

Sentence + ne

Zehi o-negai shimasu **ne**.

ぜひお願いしますね。

Please be sure to do it.

Mō kaerimashō **ne**.

もう帰りましょうね。

Let's go home, O.K.?

166 ね ne (3)

A sentence-final particle that indicates a reason or cause.

Sentence + kara + ne

Kyō wa ikenai. Kaigi ga aru kara **ne**.

今日は行けない。会議があるからね。

I can't go today. I have a meeting, you know.

V-te + ne

Tsukareta. Arukisugite **ne**.

疲れた。歩きすぎてね。

I'm tired. I walked too much, you know.

A sentence-final particle that indicates emotion. **nē** (1) ねえ 167

Sentence + nē

Omoshiroi hanashi deshita **nē**.
面白い話でしたねえ。
What an interesting talk it was!

Suteki na doresu (desu) **nē**.
素敵なドレス（です）ねえ。
What a gorgeous dress!

A sentence-final particle that indicates a strong conviction. **yo** (1) よ 168

Sentence + yo

Iie, kyō wa itsuka desu **yo**.
いいえ、今日は五日ですよ。
No, today is the fifth, you know.

Hara-san wa ashita kimasu **yo**.
原さんは明日来ますよ。
Miss Hara will come tomorrow for sure.

A sentence-final particle that indicates a request or suggestion. **yo** (2) よ 169

Sentence + yo

Hachiji ni kite kudasai **yo**.
八時に来て下さいよ。
Come at eight o'clock.

Chotto yasumimashō **yo**.
ちょっと休みましょうよ。
Let's take a break.

170 かしら **kashira** (1)

A sentence-final particle that indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself. Used mainly by women.

Sentence + kashira

Kare wa kuru **kashira**.
彼は来るかしら。
I wonder if he's coming.

Ginkō wa mō shimatta **kashira**.
銀行はもう閉まったかしら。
I wonder if the bank has already closed.

Kore tetsudatte moraeru **kashira**.
これ手伝ってもらえるかしら。
I wonder if you could help me with this.

Mō kaette mo ii **kashira**.
もう帰ってもいいかしら。
I wonder if I could go home now.

171 かな **kana** (1)

A sentence-final particle that indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself. Used mainly by men.

Sentence + kana

Ano mise wa nanji ni aku **kana**.
あの店は何時に開くかな。
What time does that store open, I wonder.

Kaigi wa owatta **kana**.
会議は終わったかな。
I wonder if the meeting is over.

Kono isu o hakonde moraeru **kana**.
このいすを運んでもらえるかな。
I wonder if you could carry these chairs for me.

Ashita ame ga furu **kana**.
明日雨が降るかな。
I wonder if it will rain tomorrow.

Exercise 54 (164–171): **Select a sentence-final particle for each sentence.**

1. Shinjuku e asobi ni ikō (kana/yo).
新宿へ遊びに行こう（かな・よ）。
Let's go to Shinjuku to have fun.

2. Koko ni namae to jūsho o kaite kudasai (ne/nē).
ここに名前と住所を書いて下さい（ね・ねえ）。
Write your name and address here, will you?

3. Ginza made kuruma de juppun mo kakaranai (nē/yo/kashira).
銀座まで車で十分もかからない（ねえ・よ・かしら）。
It doesn't take ten minutes by car to Ginza, I'm sure.

4. Kyō sensei ni shikarareta. Shukudai o wasurete (yo/ne).
今日先生に叱られた。宿題を忘れて（よ・ね）。
I was scolded by my teacher today. I forgot my homework, you know.

5. Ii tenki desu (yo/nē). Sukoshi arukimashō (yo/nē).
いい天気です（よ・ねえ）。 少し歩きましょう（よ・ねえ）。
What fine weather! Let's take a short walk.

6. Pari kara no hikōki wa mō Narita ni tsuita (ne/yo/kashira).
パリからの飛行機はもう成田に着いた（ね・よ・かしら）。
I wonder if the plane from Paris has already arrived at Narita.

7. Kōdō de dare ka piano o hiite iru (yo/ne/kana).
講堂でだれかピアノを弾いている（よ・ね・かな）。
Someone is playing the piano in the auditorium, aren't they?

8. Ano kabe ni kono posutā o hatte moraeru (yo/nē/kana).
あの壁にこのポスターをはってもらえる（よ・ねえ・かな）。
I wonder if you could hang this poster on that wall.

A sentence-final particle used by men for confirmation of a statement.

na (1) な 172

Sentence + na

Ano bā wa takai **na**.
あのバーは高いな。
That bar is expensive, isn't it?

Kare wa yoku yatta **na**.
彼はよくやったな。
He did well, didn't he?

173 な **na** (2)

A sentence-final particle used by men to indicate prohibition.

V-u + na

Ima, iku **na**.
今、行くな。
Don't go now.

Koko de taberu **na**.
ここで食べるな。
Don't eat here.

174 なあ **nā** (1)

A sentence-final particle used mostly by men to indicate emotion.

Sentence + nā

Yoku ame ga furu **nā**.
よく雨が降るなあ。
How hard it's raining!

Yūbe wa samukatta **nā**.
昨夜は寒かったなあ。
How cold it was last night!

175 なあ **nā** (2)

A sentence-final particle indicating a desire.

V-u + to ii + nā

Kyō kanojo ga kuru to ii **nā**.
今日彼女が来るといいなあ。
I wish she would come today.

V-ba + yokatta + nā

Motto benkyō sureba yokatta **nā**.
もっと勉強すればよかったなあ。
I wish I'd studied more.

A sentence-final particle used to indicate a question or soften a commandc. Used usually by women.

no (7) の 176

Sentence + no

"Doko e iku **no**." "Uchi e kareu **no**."

「どこへ行くの。」「うちへ帰るの。」

"Where are you going?" "Going home."

Koko de asobanai **no**.

ここで遊ばないの。

Don't play here.

A sentence-final particle used by women to soften a statement.

wa (1) わ 177

Sentence + wa

Wada-san wa konai to omou **wa**.

和田さんは来ないと思うわ。

I think that Miss Wada won't come.

Shiai wa tsumaranakatta **wa**.

試合はつまらなかったわ。

The game was boring.

A sentence-final particle used mostly by men to indicate slight emphasis.

sa (1) さ 178

Noun/adj./adjectival noun/verb + sa

Kore ga shashin **sa**.

これが写真さ。

This is the photo (that I told you of).

Kare no kuruma wa ōkii **sa**.

彼の車は大きいさ。

His car is big.

Sore wa daisuki **sa**.

それは大好きさ。

I just love it.

Shukudai wa ato de suru **sa**.

宿題は後でするさ。

I'll do my homework later.

179 こと koto (1)

A sentence-final particle used by women to indicate emotion.

Sentence + koto

Mā, hana ga utsukushii **koto**.

まあ花が美しいこと。

Oh, how beautiful the flowers are!

Yoku ganbatta **koto**.

よく頑張ったこと。

How hard you tried!

180 こと koto (2)

A sentence-final particle used by women to indicate a suggestion or invitation.

V-nai + koto

Kaimono ni ikanai **koto**.

買物に行かないこと。

Shall we go shopping?

Uchi e asobi ni konai **koto**.

うちへ遊びに来ないこと。

Won't you come over to my house for a visit?

Exercise 55 (172–180): Select a sentence-final particle for each sentence.

1. Kare wa Nihonjin ni shite wa se ga takai (no/na/kana).
   彼は日本人にしては背が高い（の・な・かな）。
   He is tall for a Japanese, isn't he?

2. Tomu wa Nihongo ga yoku hanaseru (sa/nā/kana).
   トムは日本語がよく話せる（さ・なあ・かな）。
   Tom can speak Japanese so well!

3. Suteki na sētā (nē/yo). Doko de katta (wa/no).
   素敵なセーター（ねえ・よ）。どこで買った（わ・の）。
   What a nice sweater! Where did you get it?

4. Samui kara, soto de asobanai (na/no/koto).
   寒いから、外で遊ばない（な・の・こと）。
   It's cold, so don't play outside.

5. Tsukareta (wa/sa). Asoko de o-cha demo nomanai (wa/sa/koto)

疲れた（わ・さ）。あそこでお茶でも飲まない（わ・さ・こと）。

I'm tired. Shall we have tea or something over there?

6. Ano yama wa kiken da kara, hitori de noboru (sa/na/wa).

あの山は危険だから、一人で登る（さ・な・わ）。

Because that mountain is dangerous, don't climb alone.

7. Ano shiai o mi ni ikeba yokatta (sa/nā/koto).

あの試合を見に行けばよかった（さ・なあ・こと）。

I wish I'd gone to see that game.

8. Watashi-tachi onna dake de pātii o shita (sa/no). Yokatta (sa/wa).

私達女だけでパーティーをした（さ・の）。よかった（さ・わ）。

We women alone had a party. We had a good time.

A sentence-final particle indicating a reason or excuse.

mono (1) もの

181

Sentence + mono

"Naze ikanai no." "Isogashii **mono**."

「なぜ行かないの。」「忙しいもの。」

"Why don't you go?" "I'm busy, you know."

Mō nai no. Watashi ga minna tsukatta **mono**.

もうないの。私がみんな使ったもの。

All gone. I've used them all.

A sentence-final particle indicating an assertion.

tomo (7) とも

182

Sentence + tomo

"Mō kaette mo ii desu ka." "Ii (desu) **tomo**."

「もう帰ってもいいですか。」「いい（です）とも。」

"May I go home now?" "Certainly."

Motto benkyō suru **tomo**.

もっと勉強するとも。

I will definitely study harder.

183 ものか **mono ka** (1)

A sentence-final particle used mainly by men to indicate a negative determination or a rhetorical question. Mono desu ka may be used by women.

V-u + mono ka/mono desu ka

Anna tokoro e nido to iku **mono ka**.

あんな所へ二度と行くものか。

I'll never go to such a place again.

Mō ano mise de kau **mono** desu **ka**.

もうあの店で買うものですか。

I'll never shop again at that store.

184 や **ya** (3)

A sentence-final particle used by men to soften a statement, request, or suggestion.

Sentence + ya

Kore wa umai **ya**.

これはうまいや。

This is tasty.

Mō yameyō **ya**.

もう止めようや。

Let's quit now.

185 たら **tara** (3)

A sentence-final particle indicating a suggestion or proposal.

V-ta + ra

Kono hon o yon**dara**.

この本を読んだら。

Why not read this book?

Kochira no akai no o kat**tara**.

こちらの赤いのを買ったら。

Why not buy this red one?

A sentence-final particle indicating a rhetorial question with negative implication.

yara (3) やら 186

Sentence + yara

Kono ame wa itsu yamu (no) **yara**.

この雨はいつ止む（の）やら。

I wonder when this rain will stop.

Kare no shōrai wa dō naru **yara**.

彼の将来はどうなるやら。

I wonder what his future will be like.

A sentence-final particle used by men to add force to a sentence.

ze (1) ぜ 187

Sentence + ze

Saki ni iku **ze**.

先に行くぜ。

I'm going on ahead.

Tanonda **ze**.

頼んだぜ。

I'm counting on you.

A sentence-final particle used by men to add force to a sentence (more emphatic than ze) or to indicate a question to oneself.

zo (1) ぞ 188

Sentence + zo

Kore wa muzukashii **zo**.

これは難しいぞ。

This is difficult.

Jikan da **zo**. Sorosoro dekareru **zo**.

時間だぞ。そろそろ出かけるぞ。

It's time. I'm leaving now.

Kondo koso kitto ganbaru **zo**.

今度こそきっと頑張るぞ。

I sure will try hard this time.

Doa ga aite iru. Hen da **zo**.

ドアが開いている。変だぞ。

The door is open. Strange!

Exercise 56 (181–188): Select a sentence-final particle for each sentence.

1. Konban wa derarenai (tomo/no). Ashita shiken ga aru (tomo/mono).
今晩は出られない（とも・の）。 明日試験がある（とも・もの）。
I can't go out tonight. I have an examination tomorrow, you know.

2. "Kore karite mo ii (kana/yara)." "Ii (tomo/mono ka)."
「これ借りてもいい（かな・やら）。」「いい（とも・ものか）。」
"I wonder if I can borrow this." "Sure you can."

3. Mō sanji da (wa/ze). Chotto yasunde o-cha demo nomō (zo/ya).
もう三時だ（わ・ぜ）。ちょっと休んでお茶でも飲もう（ぞ・や）。
It's already three o'clock. Let's take a break and have tea or something.

4. Daigaku ni haitta mono no, itsu sotsugyō dekiru (tara/yara).
大学に入ったものの、いつ卒業出来る（たら・やら）。
Although he entered college, I wonder when he'll be able to graduate.

5. Hen da (zo/sa). Michi o machigaeta (ze/kana)
変だ（ぞ・さ）。道を間違えた（ぜ・かな）。
Strange! I wonder if we took the wrong road.

6. Kinyōbi made ni kono shigoto o sumase (yo/ya/tara).
金曜日までにこの仕事を済ませ（よ・や・たら）。
Why not finish this work by Friday?

7. Buchō ni tanomarete mo, konna shigoto ga dekiru (tomo/mono ka/yara)
部長に頼まれても、こんな仕事が出来る（とも・ものか・やら）。
Even if I were asked by the department head, I wouldn't do such a job.

Alphabetical Finding List & Answers to Exercises

ba ば

(1) Used as a conjunction, “if.” 77

Chikatetsu de ike**ba**, nijuppun kakaru.

地下鉄で行けば二十分かかる。

If you go by subway, it takes 20 minutes.

Yasukere**ba**, kaimasu.

安ければ買います。

If it’s cheap, I’ll buy it.

(2) In the form ba ii “you need only do,” “all you have to do.” 78

Mainichi sukoshi undō sure**ba** ii.

毎日少し運動すればいい。

You need only exercise a little every day.

(3) Enumerates two or more actions or states: “both…and,” “neither…nor.” 79

Jimu wa sashimi mo tabere**ba** sushi mo taberu.

ジムはさしみも食べればすしも食べる。

Jim eats both sashimi and sushi.

Sono niwa wa hiroku mo nakere**ba** semaku mo nai.

その庭は広くもなければ狭くもない。

The garden is neither large nor small.

bakari ばかり

(1) Indicates approximate amount: “about.” 25

Ie ga goken **bakari** tatte imasu.

家が五軒ばかり建っています。

About five houses are being built.

(2) Indicates only item, action or state: “only,” “nothing but,” “just.” 62

Kare wa sake **bakari** nonde imasu.

彼は酒ばかり飲んでいます。

He is drinking nothing but sake.

Kono shinamono wa yasui **bakari** desu.

この品物は安いばかりです。

This article is just cheap.

(3) Indicates an action just completed: “just done” 63

Kare wa okita **bakari** desu.

彼は起きたばかりです。

He has just gotten up

(4) In the form bakari de naku: “not only…but also.” 142

Kare wa Eigo **bakari** de naku Doitsugo mo hanasu.

彼は英語ばかりでなくドイツ語も話す。

He speaks not only English but also German.

(5) Indicates the only action left to do: “be ready to do.” **149**

Mō hikkoshi o suru **bakari** desu.

もう引っ越しをするばかりです。

The only thing left for us to do is to move. (We are ready to move.)

(6) In the form “bakari ni” emphasizes a reason or cause: “just because.” **150**

Kaze o hiita **bakari** ni, gaishutsu dekinai.

風邪をひいたばかりに、外出出来ない。

Just because I caught a cold, I can't go out.

dake だけ

(1) Indicates a limit on things or amounts: “only.”

Otoko no ko **dake** (ga) kimashita.

男の子だけ（が）来ました。

Only boys came.

Hawai e ichido **dake** itta.

ハワイへ一度だけ行った。

I've been to Hawaii only once.

(2) Indicates a limit on an action or state: “only,” “just.” **57**

Maiasa jūsu o ippai nomu **dake** da.

毎朝ジュースを一杯飲むだけだ。

I just drink a glass of juice every morning.

Kono kēki wa amai **dake** desu.

このケーキは甘いでだけです。

This cake is sweet, that's all.

(3) Indicates an extent or amount: “as…as.” **123**

Arukeru **dake** aruita.

歩けるだけ歩いた。

I walked as much as I could.

(4) “The more…the more.” **124**

Tabereba taberu **dake** futorimasu.

食べれば食べるだけ太ります。

The more you eat, the fatter you become.

(5) In the form“dake de naku” “not only…but also.” **143**

Niku **dake** de naku sakana mo katta.

肉だけでなく魚も買った。

I bought not only beef but also fish.

dake ni だけに

(1) Indicates a cause or reason: “as you might expect,” “because.” **156**

Ichiryū no gaka **dake ni**, kanojo no e wa subarashii.

一流の画家だけに彼女の絵は素晴らしい。

As you might expect of a first-rate painter, her paintings are wonderful.

dano だの

(1) Indicates examples from a longer list: "and," "things like." 110

Kanojo wa inu **dano** neko **dano**(o) katte iru.

彼女は犬だの猫だの（を）飼っている。

She keeps a dog, a cat, and other animals.

Nomu **dano** taberu **dano** odoru **dano** shita.

飲むだの食べるだの踊るだのした。

We did things like drinking, eating, dancing, and so on.

(2) Indicates for a pair of opposite actions or states. 111

Kanojo wa iku **dano** ikanai **dano** (to) itte iru.

彼女は行くだの行かないだの（と）言っている。

She says that she's going and then that she's not going.

de で

(1) Indicates the location of an action: "at," "in," "on." 17

Gakusei wa kōdō **de** kōgi o kiite imasu.

学生は講堂で講義を聞いています。

The students are listening to the lecture in the auditorium.

(2) Indicates a means or materials: "by," "with." 26

Fune **de** Hawai e ikimashita.

船でハワイへ行きました。

We went to Hawaii by boat.

Kami **de** ningyō o tsukurimasu.

紙で人形を作ります。

They make dolls with papaer.

(3) Indicates a limit or scope: "in," "among." 36

Tomu wa kurasu **de** ichiban ii gakusei desu.

トムはクラスで一番いい学生です。

Tom is the best student in the class.

(4) Indicates a cause or reason: "due to," "because of." 48

Byōki **de** shigoto ni ikemasen.

病気で仕事に行けません。

I can't go to work due to illness.

(5) Indicates conditions: "with," "by." 54

Kodomo ga hadashi **de** hashitte iru.

子供がはだしで走っている。

A child is running barefoot.

(6) Limits numbers: “for,” ”in.”

55

Kono nōto wa nisatsu **de** sanbyakuen desu.

このノートは二冊で三百円です。

These notebooks are 300 yen for two.

Ninen **de** purojekuto o sumasemashita.

二年でプロジェクトを済ませました。

We finished the project in two years.

(7) Indicates the time of completion or expiration: “as of.”

58

Kono biru wa sangatsu **de** kansei shimasu.

このビルは三月で完成します。

This building will be completed as of March.

demo でも

(1) Indicates emphasis: ”even.”

46

Sonna koto wa kodomo **demo** dekimasu.

そんな事は子供でも出来ます。

Even a child can do such a thing.

(2) Used with an interrogative word for positive emphasis: “anything,” “anyone,” “any time,” “anywhere,” etc.

47

Kono inu wa nan **demo** tabemasu.

この犬は何でも食べます。

This dog eats anything.

Kono kigu wa dare **demo** tsukaeru.

この器具はだれでも使える。

Anyone can handle this utensil.

(3) Indicates an item roughly: “...or something.”

59

O-cha **demo** ikaga desu ka.

お茶でもいかがですか。

Would you like a cup of tea or something?

4) Indicates two or more items as an example of a larger list: “...and what not.”

61

Sara wa Nihongo **demo** Chūgokugo **demo** hanasemasu.

サラは日本語でも中国語でも話せます。

Sarah can speak Japanese, Chinese and other languages.

dokoroka どころか

(1) “Far from,” “not to mention.”

155

Kare wa ie **dokoro ka** kuruma mo nai.

彼は家どころか車もない。

He even doesn’t have a car, not to mention a house.

e へ

(1) Indicates direction

8

Yamada-san wa Kyōto **e** itta.

山田さんは京都へ行った。

Mrs. Yamada went to Kyoto.

ga が

(1) Indicates the subject.

3

Kōen **ga** arimasu.

公園があります。

There is a park.

Dare **ga** kimashita ka.

だれが来ましたか。

Who came?

(2) In the "...wa ...ga" construction, indicates the subject or the object of certain verbs and adjectives.

51

Zō wa hana **ga** nagai desu.

象は鼻が長いです。

Elephants have long trunks. (As for elephants, their trunks are long.)

Jimu wa Nihongo **ga** hanasemasu.

ジムは日本語が話せます。

Jim can speak Japanese.

Watashi wa ii kamera **ga** hoshii.

私はいいカメラが欲しい。

I want a good camera.

(3) Used as a conjunction to connect two sentences: "but," "and."

52

Tomu wa kimasu **ga** Biru wa kimasen.

トムは来ますがビルは来ません。

Tom is coming, but Bill isn't coming.

Watashi mo sono eiga o mimashita **ga**, totemo yokatta desu.

私もその映画を見ましたが、とても良かったです。

I also saw the movie, and found it very good.

4) Indicates the subject of a subordinate clause when it is different from the subject of the main clause.

65

Kare **ga** kita toki, watashi wa shokuji o shite imashita.

彼が来た時、私は食事をしていました。

When he came, I was having a meal.

(5) Indicates the subject of a relative clause.

68

Haha **ga** yoku kau mise wa asoko desu.

母がよく買う店はあそこです。

The store where my mother often shops is over there.

(6) Lists conditions in spite of which the main verb is true: "even if," "whether or not."

138

Ame ga furō **ga** yuki ga furō **ga**, watashi wa ikimasu.

雨が降ろうが雪が降ろうが、私は行きます。

Even if it rains or snows, I'll go.

Kare ga koyō **ga** komai **ga**, kaigi o hajimemashō.

彼が来ようが来まいが、会議を始めましょう。

Whether he comes or not, let's start the meeting.

(7) In the form "ga hayai ka" : "as soon as."

146

Heya ni hairu **ga** hayai ka, dentō o tsuketa.

部屋に入るが早いか、電灯をつけた。

As soon as I entered the room, I turned on the light.

(8) Used to soften a statement or refusal. **162**

Kachō wa ima kaigichū desu **ga**.

課長は今会議中ですが。

The section chief is now in the meeting (he's not available).

hodo ほど

(1) Indicates an approximate amount: "about." **24**

Ringo ga muttsu **hodo** nokotte imasu.

りんごが六つほど残っています。

About six apples are left.

(2) Indicates a comparison in a negative sentence: "as…as." **41**

Tomu **hodo** ii gakusei wa imasen.

トムほどいい学生はいません。

There is no student as good as Tom.

(3) Indicates the extent of an action or condition: "so…that." **121**

Okirarenai **hodo** tsukarete imasu.

起きられないほど疲れています。

I am so tired that I can't get up.

(4) Indicates a relationship: "the more …the more." **122**

Renshū sureba suru **hodo** jōzu ni naru.

練習すればするほど上手になる。

The more you practice, the better you become.

ka か

(1) At the end of a sentence, indicates a question. **2**

Anata wa gakusei desu **ka**.

あなたは学生ですか。

Are you a student?

(2) Indicates a choice or alternative: "either…or." **27**

Hara-san **ka** Miki-san ga kuru deshō.

原さんか三木さんが来るでしょう。

Either Mr. Hara or Mr. Miki will come.

(3) Used with an interrogative word: "something," "someone," "someday," "somewhere," etc. **42**

Tsukue no ue ni nani **ka** arimasu.

机の上に何かあります。

There is something on the desk.

Dare **ka** kimashita.

だれか来ました。

Someone came.

(4) Indicates uncertainty about a state or reason: "I wonder." **108**

Sumisu-san wa kuru deshō **ka** .

スミスさんは来るでしょうか。

I wonder if Mr. Smith is coming.

Shiken ga aru no **ka** Jimu wa yoku benkyō shite imasu.

試験があるのかジムはよく勉強しています。

I wonder if Jim will have an exam — he is studying hard.

(5) Used in an embedded sentence, indicates a question: "when," "what," etc. **109**

Kaigi wa itsu aru **ka** oboete imasen.

会議はいつあるか覚えていません。

I don't remember when the meeting will be held.

Kare ga kuru **ka** dō **ka** shirimasen.

彼が来るかどうか知りません。

I don't know whether he'll come or not.

(6) In the form "ka…nai uchi ni" : "no sooner had," "hardly had." **148**

Ofisu ni hairu **ka** hairanai uchi ni denwa ga natta.

オフィスに入るか入らないうちに電話が鳴った。

No sooner had I entered the office than the phone rang.

kana かな

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself: "I wonder." **171**

Ano mise wa nanji ni aku **kana**.

あの店は何時に開くかな。

What time does that store open, I wonder.

Kono isu o hakonde moraeru **kana**.

このいすを運んでもらえるかな。

I wonder if you could carry these chairs.

kara から

(1) Indicates a starting point in time and space: "from." **20**

Kaisha wa kuji **kara** hajimaru.

会社は九時から始まる。

(Work at) the company begins at nine o'clock.

Ano fune wa gaikoku **kara** kita.

あの船は外国から来た。

That ship came from a foreign country.

(2) Indicates source (a giver, material or cause): "from." **49**

Watashi wa Oda-san **kara** jishin no nyūsu o kiita.

私は小田さんから地震のニュースを聞いた。

I heard the news about the earthquake from Mr. Oda.

Wain wa budō **kara** tsukuru.

ワインはぶどうから作る。

Wine is made from grapes.

(3) Used as a conjunction: "after," "since." **66**

Shawā o abite **kara** nemasu.

シャワーを浴びてから寝ます。

I go to bed after taking a shower.

(4) Used as a conjunction, indicates a cause or reason: "because." **70**

Ashita shiken ga aru **kara**, konban benkyō shimasu.

明日試験があるから、今晩勉強します。

Because I have an examination tomorrow, I'll study tonight.

kashira かしら

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates uncertainty, a request, or a question to oneself: "I wonder." **170**

Kare wa kuru **kashira.**

彼は来るかしら。

I wonder if he is coming.

Kore tetsudatte moraeru **kashira**.

これ手伝ってもらえるかしら。

I wonder if you could help me with this.

keredomo けれども

(1) Used as a conjunction: "but," "although." **160**

Tomu wa kuru **keredomo** Jimu wa konai.

トムは来るけれどもジムは来ない。

Tom is coming but Jim is not.

(2) Indicates a preliminary remark. **161**

Oda desu **keredomo**, Hara-san wa irasshaimasu ka.

小田ですけれども、原さんはいらっしゃいますか。

I am Oda. Is Mr. Hara here?

(3) Indicates a desire: "I'd like," "I wish." **163**

Mō sukoshi chiisai no ga hoshii no desu **keredomo**.

もう少し小さいのが欲しいのですけれども。

I'd like something a little smaller.

kiri きり

(1) Indicates a limit on amount: "only." **98**

Asoko ni kuruma ga nidai **kiri** tomatte iru.

あそこに車が二台きり止まっている。

Only two cars are parked there.

(2) Indicates the last time a certain incidence occured: "since." **99**

Yamada-san wa are **kiri** kimasen.

山田さんはあれきり来ません。

Miss Yamada hasn't come since then.

koso こそ

(1) Emphasizes the word preceding it. **129**

Rainen **koso** Igirisu e ikitai desu.

来年こそイギリスへ行きたいです。

Next year for sure, I'd like to go to England.

(2) Emphasizes a reason or cause: “because.” 130

O-kane ga ireba **koso**, yoru mo hataraite iru no desu.

お金が要ればこそ、夜も働いているのです。

It's because I really need the money that I'm working nights as well.

koto こと

(1) A sentence-final particle used by women to indicate emotion. 179

Mā, hana ga utsukushii **koto**.

まあ花が美しいこと。

Oh, how beautiful the flowers are!

(2) A sentence-final particle. Used by women to indicate a suggestion or invitation 180

Kaimono ni ikanai **koto**.

買物に行かないこと。

Shall we go shopping?

kurai くらい

(1) Indicates an approximate amount: “about.” 23

Shiken wa nijikan **kurai** kakatta.

試験は二時間くらいかかった。

The examination took about two hours.

(2) Indicates a comparison in a positive sentence: “as…as.” 40

Sono niwa wa gorufujō **kurai** ōkii.

その庭はゴルフ場くらい大きい。

The garden is as big as a golf course.

(3) Indicates an extent of an action or condition: “as much as,” “so…that.” 120

Hiragana **kurai** yomemasu.

ひらがなくらい読めます。

I can read as much as hiragana.

Nodo ga itaku naru **kurai** utatta.

のどが痛くなるくらい歌った。

I sang so much that my throat hurt.

made まで

(1) Indicates a limit on time, space, or quantity: “until,” “to,” “up to.” 22

Yūbe jūji **made** benkyō shita.

昨夜十時まで勉強した。

I studied until ten last night.

Ie kara gakkō **made** arukimasu.

家から学校まで歩きます。

I walk from my house to the school.

Kono kuruma wa gonin **made** noreru.

この車は五人まで乗れる。

This car can take up to five people.

(2) Indicates emphasis: “even.” **88**

Sensei **made** kōgi ni shusseki shita.

先生まで講義に出席した。

Even teachers attended the lecture.

(3) In the form “made mo nai,” provides a negative emphasis: “there is no need,” “need not to.” **157**

Kono repōto wa yomu **made** mo nai.

このレポートは読むまでもない。

There is no need to read this report.

mo も

(1) Refers to the noun immediately preceding it: “too,” “also,” “either.” **13**

Chichi wa isha desu. Haha **mo** isha desu.

父は医者です。母も医者です。

My father is a doctor. My mother also is a doctor.

Terebi o minai. Rajio **mo** kikanai.

テレビを見ない。ラジオも聞かない。

I don’t watch TV. I don’t listen to the radio, either.

(2) Used repeatedly: “both…and…,” “neither…nor…” **14**

Tomu **mo** Biru **mo** Nihongo o hanasu.

トムもビルも日本語を話す。

Both Tom and Bill speak Japanese.

Kare wa tenisu **mo** gorufu **mo** shinai.

彼はテニスもゴルフもしない。

He plays neither tennis nor golf.

(3) Used with an interrogative word: “nothing,” “nobody,” “nowhere,”etc. **43**

Soko ni wa nani **mo** arimasen.

そこには何もありません。

There is nothing there.

Dare **mo** kare no jūsho o shiranai.

だれも彼の住所を知らない。

Nobody knows his address.

(4) Provides emphasis: “as many (much) as,” “not even.” **60**

Hon o gosatsu **mo** kaimashita.

本を五冊も買いました。

I bought as many as five books.

Ike ni sakana wa ippiki **mo** imasen.

池に魚は一匹もいません。

There isn’t even one fish in the pond.

mono もの

(1) A sentence-final particle Indicating a reason or excuse. **181**

“Naze ikanai no.” “Isogashii **mono**.”

「なぜ行かないの。」「忙しいもの。」

“Why don’t you go?” “I’m busy, you know.”

mono ka ものか

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used mainly by men to indicate a negative determination or a rhetorical question. **183**

Anna tokoro e nido to iku **mono ka**.

あんな所へ二度と行くものか。

I'll never go to such a place again.

mono no ものの

(1) Used as a conjunction: "but," "although." **158**

Sekkyō suru **mono no**, jikkō wa muzukashii.

説教するものの、実行は難しい。

Although you may preach it, it's difficult to practice.

na な

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by men for confirmation of a statement. **172**

Ano bā wa takai **na**.

あのバーは高いな。

That bar is expensive, isn't it?

(2) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to indicate prohibition. **173**

Ima, iku **na**.

今、行くな。

Don't go now.

nā なあ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used mostly by men to indicate emotion. **174**

Yūbe wa samukatta **nā**.

昨夜は寒かったなあ。

How cold it was last night!

(2) A sentence-final particle indicating a desire. **175**

Kyō kanojo ga kuru to ii **nā**.

今日彼女が来るといいなあ。

I wish she would come today.

nado など

(1) Indicates a partial list of items: "among other things," "and so forth." **12**

Toshokan ni hon ya zasshi **nado** ga aru.

図書館に本や雑誌などがある。

There are books and magazines (among other things) in the library.

(2) Expresses "something to the effect." **112**

Kare wa gakkō o yameru **nado** to itte iru.

彼は学校を辞めるなどと言っている。

He says something to the effect that he is quitting school.

(3) Indicates examples: "such things like," "or something." **119**

Watashi wa bara **nado** suki desu.

私はばらなど好きです。

I like things like roses.

(4) Indicates a deprecatory or humble attitude. **152**

Watashi **nado**, totemo kore wa yakusemasen.

私など、とてもこれは訳せません。

Someone like me could never translate this.

nagara ながら

(1) Indicates simultaneous actions by one subject: "while," "as." **67**

Rajio o kiki**nagara** benkyō shimasu.

ラジオを聞きながら勉強します。

I study while listening to the radio.

(2) Used as a conjunction: "although," "though," "but." **92**

O-kane ga ari**nagara** haraimasen.

お金がありながら払いません。

Although he has money, he doesn't pay.

(3) Used with numbers and counters: "both," "all." **101**

Kono ie wa niken **nagara** furui desu.

この家は二軒ながら古いです。

Both of these houses are old.

nara なら

(1) Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition: "if." **74**

Watashi **nara**, sonna koto wa shinai.

私なら、そんな事はしない。

If I were you, I wouldn't do such a thing.

(2) Indicates a topic: "as for." **75**

Yōsho **nara**, sangai ni arimasu.

洋書なら、三階にあります。

As for foreign books, they're on the third floor.

nari なり

(1) Indicates a choice: "either...or," "whether...or." **127**

Oda-san **nari** watashi **nari** ga kaigi ni shusseki shimasu.

小田さんなり私なりが会議に出席します。

Either Mr. Oda or I will attend the meeting.

Iku **nari** yameru **nari** hayaku kimemashō.

行くなり止めるなり早く決めましょう。

Let's decide quickly whether we are going or not.

(2) Used with an interrogative word: "anything," "anyone," "any time," etc. **128**

Nan **nari** to itte kudasai.

何なりと言って下さい。

Please say anything.

Itsu **nari** to kite kudasai.

いつなりと来て下さい。

Please come any time.

(3) Expresses "as soon as." **145**

Asagohan o taberu **nari**, ie o deta.

朝ご飯を食べるなり、家を出た。

As soon as I ate breakfast, I left the house.

ne ね

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used for confirmation of a statement. **164**

Samui desu **ne**.

寒いですね。

It's cold, isn't it?

(2) A sentence-final particle. Used to soften a request or suggestion. **165**

Zehi o-negai shimasu **ne**.

ぜひお願いしますね。

Please be sure to do it.

Mō kaerimashō **ne**.

もう帰りましょうね。

Let's go home, O.K.?

(3) A sentence-final particle. Gives a reason or cause. **166**

Kyō wa ikenai. Kaigi ga aru kara **ne**.

今日は行けない。会議があるからね。

I can't go today. I have a meeting, you know.

nē ねえ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates emotion. **167**

Omoshiroi hanashi deshita **nē**.

面白い話でしたねえ。

What an interesting talk was it!

ni に

(1) Indicates the location or existence of animate and inanimate things: "in," "at," "on," **4**

Asoko **ni** kōen ga arimasu.

あそこに公園があります。

There is a park over there.

Tanaka-san wa heya **ni** imasu.

田中さんは部屋にいます。

Mr. Tanaka is in the room.

(2) Indicates time and frequency: "at," "on," "in," "every." **7**

Ichiji **ni** kite kudasai.

一時に来て下さい。

Please come at one o'clock.

Kare wa ichinichi oki **ni** kuru.

彼は一日おきに来る。

He comes every other day.

(3) Indicates an indirect object: "to." **15**

Watashi wa ane **ni** tegami o kaita.

私は姉に手紙を書いた。

I wrote a letter to my older sister.

(4) Indicates the surface of something on which a certain action takes place: "on." **16**

Gakusei ga kokuban **ni** kanji o kaite imasu.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いています。

A student is writing kanji on the blackboard.

5) Indicates a point of arrival: "at." **30**

Densha ga eki **ni** tsukimashita.

電車が駅に着きました。

A train arrived at the station.

(6) Indicates an entering motion: "on," "in." **31**

Shinjuku de densha **ni** norimashita.

新宿で電車に乗りました。

I got on a train at Shinjuku.

(7) Indicates purpose with a motion verb: "for," "to do something." **32**

Ashita kaimono **ni** ikimasu.

明日買物に行きます。

I'll go shopping tomorrow.

Ringo o kai **ni** mise ni haitta.

りんごを買いに店に入った。

I entered a store to buy apples.

(8) Used with verbs naru, suru and others to indicate a change or choice: "to become," "to make." **44**

Kare wa pairotto **ni** narimasu.

彼はパイロットになります。

He will become a pilot.

Kaigi wa kayōbi **ni** shimashō

会議は火曜日にしましょう。

Let's have the meeting on Tuesday.

(9) Indicates a person who gives a thing or provides a service: "from." **50**

Chichi **ni** kamera o moraimashita.

父にカメラをもらいました。

I received a camera from my father.

Hara-san **ni** yūbinkyoku e itte moratta.

原さんに郵便局へ行ってもらった。

I had Miss Hara go to the post office for me.

(10) Indicates the one acting or the one acted upon: "by". **107**

Watashi wa sensei **ni** shikarareta.

私は先生に叱られた。

I was scolded by by teacher.

Sensei wa gakusei **ni** hon o yomaseru.

先生は学生に本を読ませる。

The teacher makes students read books.

Kare wa tomodachi **ni** sake o nomaserareta.

彼は友達に酒を飲ませられた。

He was made to drink sake by his friends.

(11)Joins two or more nouns to indicate a list of items. **132**

Enkai de wain **ni** uisukii **ni** sake ga deta.

宴会でワインにウイスキーに酒が出た。

At the banquet, wine, whisky, and sake were served.

(12)Connects two or more items to indicate a matching or contrasting. **133**

Fuji-san **ni** sakura

富士山に桜

Mt. Fuji and cherry blossoms

ni shite wa にしては

(1) Indicates a generally agreed upon stadard: "for," "considering that." **134**

Kare wa Amerikajin **ni shite wa** se ga hikui.

彼はアメリカ人にしては背が低い。

He is short for an American.

ni totte にとって

(1) Indicates an effect on or value of a person or thing: "for." **135**

Yasai wa karada **ni totte** ii desu.

野菜は体にとっていいです。

Vegetables are good for the body.

ni tsuite について

(1) Expresses "about" or "concerning" something or someone **136**

Nihon no keizai **ni tsuite** hanashite kudasai.

日本の経済について話して下さい。

Please speak about the Japanese economy.

no の

(1) Used between two nouns, indicates possession, location, or a modifying phrase: “’s,” “of,”,“in,” “on,” “under.” 5

Kore wa watashi **no** jisho desu.

これは私の辞書です。

This is my dictionary.

Tsukue **no** ue ni hako ga aru.

机の上に箱がある。

There is a box on the desk.

Tomu wa Nihongo **no** gakusei da.

トムは日本語の学生だ。

Tom is a student of Japanese.

(2) Indicates apposition. 19

Ano hito wa shachō **no** Miki-san desu.

あの人は社長の三木さんです。

That person is Mr. Miki, president of the company.

3) Indicates the subject of a relative clause. 69

Kare **no** kaku hon wa omoshiroi.

彼の書く本は面白い。

The books that he writes are interesting.

(4) Indicates a modified pronoun: “one.” 72

Chairo **no** o kudasai.

茶色のを下さい。

Give me a brown one.

Shi o kaku **no** wa Oda-san desu.

詩を書くのは小田さんです。

The one who writes poetry is Miss Oda.

(5) Used to nominalize verbs and sentences. 73

Narau **no** wa oshieru **no** yori yasashii.

習うのは教えるのより易しい。

Learning is easier than teaching.

Hara-san ga yameru **no** o shiranakatta.

原さんが辞めるのを知らなかった。

I didn’t know that Mr. Hara is quitting.

6) In the form “no desu,” indicates or asks an explanation or reason: 97

“Naze ikanai **no** desu ka.” “Atama ga itai **no** desu.”

「なぜ行かないのですか。」「頭が痛いのです。」

“Why don’ t you go?” “I have a headache.”

(7) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a question, a softer tone, or a mild command. Used usually by women. 176

“Doko e iku **no**,” “Uchi e kaeru **no**.”

「どこへ行くの。」「うちへ帰るの。」

“Where are you going?” “Going home ”

Koko de asobanai **no**.

ここで遊ばないの。

Don’t play here.

node ので

(1) Used as a conjuction, indicates a cause or reason: “because.” **71**

Shiai ga aru **node**, mainichi renshū shite iru.

試合があるので、毎日練習している。

Because there's a tournament, we practice every day.

nomi のみ

(1) Indicates a limit on things, actions, or states: “only,” “alone.” **87**

Kachō **nomi** (ga) enkai ni shusseki shita.

課長のみ（が）宴会に出席した。

The section chief alone attended the banquet.

Kono ie wa ōkii **nomi** desu.

この家は大きいのみです。

This house is large, that's all.

(2) Used in the form nomi narazu: “not only...but also.” **144**

Kaiga **nomi** narazu chōkoku mo mita.

絵画のみならず彫刻も見た。

I saw not only paintings but also sculptures.

noni のに

(1) Used as a conjunction to indicate “although” or “in spite of the fact that.” **91**

Kanojo wa netsu ga aru **noni**, kusuri o nomanai.

彼女は熱があるのに、薬を飲まない。

Although she has a fever, she doesn't take medicine.

(2) Indicates a purpose or function “(in order) to do.” **96**

Sakubun o kaku **noni** wāpuro o tsukaimasu.

作文を書くのにワープロを使います。

I use a word processor to write a composition.

o を

(1) Indicates the direct object of a verb. **9**

Hachiji ni asagohan **o** tabemasu.

八時に朝ご飯を食べます。

I eat breakfast at eight o'clock.

(2) Indicates a point of departure. **28**

Maiasa kuji ni ie **o** demasu.

毎朝九時に家を出ます。

I leave my house at nine o'clock every morning.

(3) Indicates a route of motion: "in," "on," "along," "through." **29**

Hiroi michi **o** arukimashita.

広い道を歩きました。

I walked along a wide road.

(4) Indicates an occupation or position. **45**

Watashi no chichi wa isha **o** shite imasu.

私の父は医者をしています。

My father is a doctor.

(5) Used with an emotive verb, indicates the cause of human emotion. **53**

Watashi wa kare no seikō **o** yorokonde imasu.

私は彼の成功を喜んでいます。

I'm happy about his success.

sa さ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used mostly by men to indicate slight emphasis. **178**

Kore ga shashin **sa**.

これが写真さ。

This is the photo (that I told you of).

sae さえ

(1) Indicates emphasis: "even." **89**

Sonna koto wa saru (de) **sae** dekiru.

そんな事は猿（で）さえ出来る。

Even a monkey can do that.

(2) Used to emphasize a condition: "if only," "as long as." **90**

Benkyō **sae** sureba, ii daigaku ni hairemasu.

勉強さえすれば、いい大学に入れます。

If you just study, you can get into a good college.

shi し

(1) Used as a conjunction, indicates two or more actions or states: "and," "as well as," "and what's more." **104**

Kare wa e mo kaku **shi** shashin mo torimasu.

彼は絵も描くし写真もとります。

He paints as well as takes photographs.

(2) Used as a conjuntion, indicates a reason: "because," "so." **105**

Ashita shiken ga aru **shi**, konban asobi ni ikemasen.

明日試験があるし、今晩遊びに行けません。

I have an examination tomorrow, so I can't go out for fun tonight.

shika しか

(1) Indicates a limit on items or quantity with a negative verb: "no one but," "nothing but," "only." **102**

Miki-san **shika** tabako o suimasen.

三木さんしかたばこを吸いません。

Only Mr. Miki smokes.

Tōsuto o ichimai **shika** tabenakatta.

トーストを一枚しか食べなかった。

I ate only one piece of toast.

(2) In the form "shika nai," indicates a restriction on the verb: "to have no choice but to." **103**

Kyō wa isogashii kara, ashita iku **shika** arimasen.

今日は忙しいから、明日行くしかありません。

Because I'm busy today, I have no choice but go tomorrow.

sura すら

(1) Indicates emphasis: "even." **151**

Akanbō (de) **sura** oyogemasu.

赤ん坊（で）すら泳げます。

Even a baby can swim.

tara たら

(1) Used as a conjunction, indicates a supposition or condition: "if." **80**

Yuki ga fut**tara**, jitensha ni noremasen.

雪が降ったら、自転車に乗れません。

If it snows, I can't ride a bicycle.

(2) Used as a conjunction, indicates an action which takes place before the action in the main clause takes place: "when," "after." **81**

Kono shigoto o sumase**tara**, uchi e kaerimasu.

この仕事を済ませたら、うちへ帰ります。

When I finish this work, I'll go home.

(3) A sentence-final particle indicating a suggestion or proposal. **185**

Kono hon o yon**dara**.

この本を読んだら。

Why not read this book?

tari たり

(1) Lists two or more actions in no particular sequence: "things like." **94**

Non**dari** tabe**tari** odot**tari** shita.

飲んだり食べたり踊ったりした。

We did things like drinking, eating, and dancing.

(2) Indicates actions or states that alternate. **95**

Hito ga it**tari** **kitari** shite iru.

人が行ったり来たりしている。

People are coming and going.

te mo ても

(1) Used as a conjunction: “even if.” 83

Hajimete **mo** ii desu ka.

始めてもいいですか。

May we start? (Is it all right even if we start?)

(2) Used with a set of contrastive verbs and adjectives: “whether or not.” 84

Yamada-san ga it**te mo** ikanaku**te mo** watashi wa ikimasu.

山田さんが行っても行かなくても私は行きます。

I'll go whether Mr. Yamada will or not.

Takaku**te mo** yasuku**te mo** kaimasen.

高くても安くても買いません。

Whether it's expensive or inexpensive, I won't buy it.

(3) Used with an interrogative word: “no matter what, when, where, who, etc.” 85

Itsu ki**te mo**, kare wa rusu desu.

いつ来ても、彼は留守です。

No matter when I come, he is out.

Nani o shi**te mo**, kanojo wa jōzu da.

何をしても、彼女は上手だ。

No matter what she does, she's good.

(4) Indicates an approximate limit: “at the most.” 115

Kōgi wa nagaku**te mo** nijikan gurai darō.

講義は長くても二時間ぐらいだろう。

The lecture would last two hours at the most.

te wa ては

(1) Indicates a condition that will bring about a negative conclusion. 86

Koko de tabe**te wa** ikemasen.

ここで食べてはいけません。

You shouldn't eat here. (If you eat here, it isn't good.)

(2) Indicates repetition of an action. 131

Gakusei ga kokuban ni kanji o kai**te wa** keshi, kai**te wa** keshi shite iru.

学生が黒板に漢字を書いては消し、書いては消ししている。

The student writes kanji on the blackboard, erases them, then writes and erases them again.

to と

(1) Indicates a complete list of items: “and.” 10

Oda-san **to** Hara-san wa enjinia desu.

小田さんと原さんはエンジニアです。

Mr. Oda and Mr. Hara are engineers.

(2) Indicates a person with whom an action is performed: "with." **18**

Watashi wa ani **to** tenisu o shita.

私は兄とテニスをした。

I played tennis with my older brother.

(3) Indicates a quotation or what someone thinks or hears. **33**

Jimu ga "Ohayō" **to** iimashita.

ジムが「お早よう」と言いました。

Jim said, "Good morning."

Tsuri ni ikō **to** omoimasu.

釣りに行こうと思います。

I think I'll go fishing.

(4) In the form "to iu," indicates the name of something: "is called." **34**

Miki **to** iu hito ga kimashita.

三木という人が来ました。

A person called Miki came.

(5) Indicates a comparison: "or." **37**

Kono tokei **to** sono tokei **to**, dochira ga takai desu ka.

この時計とその時計と、どちらが高いですか。

Which is more expensive, this watch or that one?

(6) Indicates a condition that brings about an uncontrollable result: "if," "when." **76**

Haru ga kuru **to**, atatakaku narimasu.

春が来ると、暖かくなります。

When spring comes, it gets warm.

(7) Emphasize a number in a negative sentence: "not even." **118**

Eki made aruite gofun **to** kakaranai.

駅まで歩いて五分とかからない。

It won't take even five minutes to get to the station on foot.

(8) Expresses "is about to do something," "trying (often unsuccessfully) to do something." **125**

Dekakeyō **to** shita toki, denwa ga natta.

出かけようとした時、電話が鳴った。

When I was about to leave, the telephone rang.

Tatō **to** shita ga tatenakatta.

立とうとしたが立てなかった。

I tried to stand up, but I couldn't.

(9) LIsts conditions in spite of which the main verb is true: "even if," "whether...or not." **126**

Arashi ga koyō **to** kōzui ga koyō **to**, kono ie wa anzen da.

あらしが来ようと洪水が来ようと、この家は安全だ。

Even if a storm comes or a flood comes, this house is safe.

Ame ga furō **to** furumai **to**, ikimasu.

雨が降ろうと降るまいと、行きます。

Whether it rains or not, I'll go.

to ka とか

(1) A combination of to and ka: “somethng like,” “something to the effect.” **35**

Hiru **to ka** iu Amerikajin ni atta.

ヒルとかいうアメリカ人に会った。

I met an American called something like Hill.

Rinda ga kekkon suru **to ka** kiita.

リンダが結婚するとか聞いた。

I heard something to the effect that Linda is getting married.

toka とか

(1) Indicates a list of two or more items or actions that is not exhaustive: “among other things,” “things like.” **93**

Depāto de kutsu **toka** sētā **toka** (o) kaimashita.

デパートで靴とかセーターとか（を）買いました。

I bought shoes, sweaters, and other things at the department store.

Yasumi ni wa tenisu o suru **toka** hon o yomu **toka** shimasu.

休みにはテニスをするとか本を読むとかします。

On holidays I do things like playing tennis or reading books.

tokoro ところ

(1) Indicates an action about to take place, or is/has been/was taking place, or has taken/took place. **64**

Ima dekakeru **tokoro** desu.

今出かけるところです。

I'm just about to go out.

Shukudai o shite iru **tokoro** desu.

宿題をしているところです。

I'm in the midst of doing my homework.

Kare wa dekaketa **tokoro** desu.

彼は出かけたところです。

He has just left.

(2) Used as a conjunction, indicates a condition that brings about a discovery: “when.” **82**

Mō ichido shirabeta **tokoro**, kono dēta wa machigatte ita.

もう一度調べたところ、このデータは間違っていた。

When I checked again, this data was wrong.

tokoro de ところで

(1) Used as a conjunction: “even if.” **159**

Isoida **tokoro de**, ma ni aimasen.

急いだところで、間に合いません。

Even if we hurry, we won't be in time.

tomo とも

(1) Used with numbers and counters: "both," "all."

100

Kare no kuruma wa nidai **tomo** ōkii.

彼の車は二台とも大きい。

Both of his cars are big.

(2) Indicates inclusion: "including."

106

Gopāsento no tesūryō **tomo** (de) 100 doru haratta.

五パーセントの手数料とも（で）１００ドル払った。

I paid 100 dollars including a five percent commission.

(3) Indicates an approximate maximum or minimum: "at least," "at most."

116

Kore wa sukunaku **tomo** gosenen ijō deshō.

これは少なくとも五千円以上でしょう。

This would cost more than 5,000 yen at least.

Gaikoku no baiyā wa ōku **tomo** rokujūnin gurai datta darō.

外国のバイヤーは多くとも六十人ぐらいだっただろう。

The (number of) foreign buyers was about sixty at most.

(4) Expresses "can't say whether...or..."

137

Kono sakuhin wa kessaku **tomo** dasaku **tomo** iemasen.

この作品は傑作とも駄作とも言えません。

I can't tell whether this work is a masterpiece or trash.

(5) Adds emphasis to a supposition: "no matter what," "even if."

153

Nani ga okorō **tomo**, saigo made ganbarō.

何が起ろうとも、最後まで頑張ろう。

No matter what will happen, let's do our best to the end.

Kare ga yameyō **tomo**, kono kikaku wa kawaranai.

彼が辞めようとも、この企画は変わらない。

Even if he should resign, this plan won't change.

(6) In the form "tomo arō hito," indicates someone who has acted contrary to a general opinion about him/her.

154

Keikan **tomo** arō hito ga nusumi o shita.

警官ともあろう人が盗みをした。

Although he is supposed to be a policeman, he stole something.

(7) A sentence-final particle indicating an assertion.

182

Motto benkyō suru **tomo**.

もっと勉強するとも。

I will definitely study harder.

toshite として

(1) Indicates status, capacity, or function: "as."

140

Kare wa tsūyaku **toshite** yatowareta.

彼は通訳として雇われた。

He was hired as an interpreter.

(2) Provides emphasis in a negative sentence: "without exception."

141

Kono mise ni wa hitotsu **toshite** yasui mono wa nai.

この店には一つとして安い物はない。

There isn't a single item that is inexpensive in this store.

wa は

(1) Indicates the topic of a sentence: "as for."

1

Watashi **wa** isha desu.

私は医者です。

I am a doctor. (As for me, I'm a doctor.)

Ashita **wa** hatarakimasen.

明日は働きません。

Tomorrow I don't work.

(2) Indicates contrast between two items.

6

Kanji **wa** muzukashii. Hiragana **wa** yasashii.

漢字は難しい。ひらがなは易しい。

Kanji is difficult. Hiragana is easy.

(3) Indicates that a number is the highest or lowest limit: "at least," "at the highest."

117

Kono jisho wa ichiman'en **wa** suru.

この辞書は一万円はする。

This dictionary costs at least 10,000 yen.

Kono kabin wa gosen'en **wa** shinai.

この花瓶は五千円はしない。

This flower vase couldn't cost any more than 5,000 yen.

(4) Emphasizes contrasting elements.

139

Bā de nomi **wa** shita ga, shokuji ni wa ikanakatta.

バーで飲みはしたが、食事には行かなかった。

We did drink at the bar, but didn't go out for dinner.

wa わ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by women to soften the tone of a statement.

177

Wada-san wa konai to omou **wa**.

和田さんは来ないと思うわ。

I think that Miss Wada won't come.

ya や

1) Joins two or more nouns to indicate a partial list of items: "and others," "etc."

11

Biru **ya** Jon ga tenisu o shite iru.

ビルやジョンがテニスをしている。

Bill, John, and others are playing tennis.

(2) In the form "...ya ina ya," indicates "as soon as." **147**

Okiru **ya** ina **ya**, mado o aketa.

起きるやいなや、窓を開けた。

As soon as I got up, I opened the window.

3) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to soften a statement, request or suggestion. **184**

Kore wa umai **ya**.

これはうまいや。

This is tasty.

Mō yameyō **ya**.

もう止めようや。

Let's quit now.

yara やら

(1) Lists two or more items of a longer list: "such things as." **113**

Depāto de sētā **yara** kutsu **yara** takusan katta.

デパートでセーターやら靴やら沢山買った。

I bought a lot of such things as sweaters and shoes at the department store.

(2) Indicates uncertainty: "something," "someone." **114**

Hako no naka ni nani **yara** arimasu.

箱の中に何やらあります。

There is something in the box.

Ame **yara** kiri **yara** wakarimasen.

雨やら霧やら分かりません。

I can't tell whether it's rain or fog.

(3) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a rhetorical question with negative implication: "I wonder." **186**

Kono ame wa itsu yamu (no) **yara**.

この雨はいつ止む（の）やら。

I wonder when this rain will stop.

yo よ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a strong conviction. **168**

Hara-san wa ashita kimasu **yo**.

原さんは明日来ますよ。

Miss Hara will come tomorrow for sure.

(2) A sentence-final particle. Indicates a request or suggestion. **169**

Hachiji ni kite kudasai **yo**.

八時に来て下さいよ。

Come at eight o'clock.

Chotto yasumimashō **yo**.

ちょっと休みましょうよ。

Let's take a break.

yori より

(1) Indicates a starting point in time and space: "from." 21

Kaigi wa niji **yori** okonawareru.

会議は二時より行なわれる。

The meeting will be held from two o'clock.

Ōsaka-yuki wa niban hōmu **yori** hassha shimasu.

大阪行きは二番ホームより発車します。

The train bound for Osaka leaves from platfrom No. 2.

2) Indicates a comparison: "than." 38

Kore wa sore **yori** karui desu.

これはそれより軽いです。

This is lighter than that.

Terebi o miru **yori** hon o yomitai.

テレビを見るより本を読みたい。

I'd rather read a book than watch TV.

(3) Used with an interrogative, indicates the superlative: "better than anyone, anywhere, etc." 39

Kono kōen wa doko **yori** (mo) shizuka desu.

この公園はどこより（も）静かです。

This park is quieter than anywhere else.

ze ぜ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to add force to a sentence. 187

Saki ni iku **ze**.

先に行くぜ。

I'm going on ahead.

zo ぞ

(1) A sentence-final particle. Used by men to add force to a sentence or to indicate a question to oneself. 188

Jikan da **zo**. Sorosoro dekakeru **zo**.

時間だぞ。そろそろ出かけるぞ。

It's time. I'm leaving now.

Doa ga aite iru. Hen da **zo**.

ドアが開いている。変だぞ。

The door is open. Strange!

EXERCISE 1 (1-3)

1. wa 2. ga, ga 3. ga, wa 4. wa
5. wa, ga, ga 6. ga, ga 7. ga, wa
8. ga 9. wa 10. wa, ga

EXERCISE 2 (4-6)

A. 1. ni, ga 2. ni, ga 3. ni, ga, ga
4. wa, ni, ni 5. ni, ga 6. ni, ga, ga

B. 1. no, ni, ga 2. wa, ni, no, ni
3. wa, no, no 4. wa, no, ni 5. no, ni, ga 6. no, wa 7. wa, wa 8. ga, no, no 9. wa, wa 10. no, no, ni, ga
11. no, wa, no, ni wa 12. no, ni(wa), ga, ni wa, ga

EXERCISE 3 (7-9)

A. 1. X, ni 2. X/ni 3. X, ni 4. X, X
5. X, ni 6. ni, X 7. X/ni, ni

B. 1. wa, e 2. X, no, e 3. ni, o 4. o, no, o 5. wa, X 6. wa, wa, wa
7. ni, o, ni 8. no, e wa, no, e wa
9. e, wa, ni 10. e no, wa, X

EXERCISE 4 (10-12)

1. no, to, o 2. no, ni, ya, nado
3. to, ni 4. to, ni, e 5. ni, X, ya, o/nado 6. X/ni, ya, e 7. no, ya, no, nado, no, ni 8. no, no, ni, ya
9. no, to, o 10. to, ni, e 11. to, wa, X 12. ya, o/nado, wa, wa

EXERCISE 5 (13-15)

A. 1. mo, mo 2. to 3. mo, mo
4. to, to 5. to, to 6. mo, mo
7. mo, mo

B. 1. no, mo, no 2. no, no, mo
3. ni, ga, no, ni mo 4. no, ni mo, ni mo
5. ni, e, e mo 6. wa, mo, mo
7. no, ni, o 8. ni, o 9. ni, ni, o
10. ni mo, ni mo 11. wa, ni(wa), ni wa

EXERCISE 6 (16-19)

A. 1. de, 2. ni, de 3. ni 4. de
5. ni, de

B. 1. ni, ga, wa, ni, o 2. de, o, no, de mo 3. to, X 4. no, to, de 5. de, de wa 6. no, to, de 7. no, ni, ni, ga
8. ni, no, to no 9. de, ga, no, de mo
10. ga, no, no

EXERCISE 7 (20-22)

1. to, made 2. wa, kara 3. wa, no, kara/yori 4. e, ya, kara mo
5. de, made no, o 6. no, kara no
7. made, to, de 8. kara/yori, ni
9. no, kara/yori, no, made 10. no, made ni, kara

EXERCISE 8 (23-26)

1. ni, ga, kurai/hodo/bakari 2. de, o, kurai/hodo/bakari 3. kara, ga, kurai/hodo/bakari 4. no, ni, kurai/hodo/bakari 5. o, to, o, kurai/hodo/bakari 6. kurai / hodo / bakari, ni, o 7. ni, kurai, ni 8. X, de, o
9. de, o 10. kara, made, de, kurai
11. to, de, de wa 12. kara, made, de, kurai 13. ni, de, o 14. de, o, de mo

EXERCISE 9 (27-29)

1. ka, no, ka 2. ni, to, o 3. ni, ka, o
4. kara, made, o 5. wa, ka, ni 6. hodo, no, de, o 7. o, de, de 8. de, o, made
9. o, no, de. 10. no, ka, ni, o

EXERCISE 10 (30-32)

A. 1. niji ni kyōto ni tsuku 2. getsuyōbi made ni Honkon ni tsuku 3. Ueno de densha ni noru 4. jūdō kurabu ni hairu 5. shokuji ni iku 6. gorufu o shi ni kuru 7. hon o kai ni mise ni hairu

B. 1. ni, no, no, ni 2. de, no, ni 3. to, e, ni 4. kara no, ni, ni 5. o, ni, no, ni 6. mo, mo, ni 7. made ni, ni 8. ni, e, o, ni 9. kara, e, ni 10. o, no, ni

EXERCISE 11 (33-35)

1. made, ni, to 2. ni, to, ni, to 3. de, to, to 4. ka, de, to 5. to, ga, ni 6. ni, ni, to 7. mo, mo, ni, to ka 8. made, to, o 9. ni, to, ni, to ka 10. to ka, de, o, kara, de, e

EXERCISE 12 (36-38)

1. de, wa 2. no, de, ni 3. no, de, ga 4. to, to 5. to, to, de 6. wa, yori 7. ni, o, yori 8. o, yori, ni 9. de, de, yori 10. de, yori, de, o

EXERCISE 13 (39-41)

A. 1. de, yori 2. no, yori 3. de, ga, yori 4. yori, o, ni 5. wa, ga, yori

B. 1. kurai 2. kurai 3. hodo 4. hodo 5. kurai 6. hodo 7. kurai 8. hodo 9. kurai 10. hodo

EXERCISE 14 (42-44)

1. ka, no, o 2. ka, to, ni, to 3. de, ka, o 4. ka to, ka e 5. ni, ka, mo 6. ka e, e mo, de, o 7. o, ni 8. to, to, ni, ni 9. wa, no, ni 10. wa, yori, ni

EXERCISE 15 (45-47)

1. no, no, o 2. made, no, de, o 3. no, de, no, o 4. wa, demo, demo 5. no, demo 6. no, demo, hodo 7. to demo, de 8. to demo, ni 9. o, ni, made demo 10. no, wa, demo 11. ni, ni, demo 12. kara demo, kara demo

EXERCISE 16 (48-50)

A. 1. de 2. ni/kara 3. ni/kara 4. de 5. kara 6. de 7. kara 8. ni

B. 1. de, no, ni 2. no, de, no 3. mo, mo, ni/kara, o 4. no, de, to ka 5. no, de, to 6. ni/kara, ni, o 7. ni, no, o 8. ni, o, ni, e

EXERCISE 17 (51-53)

A. 1. o, ga 2. ga, o 3, o, ga 4. o, ga 5. ga, o 6. ga, ga/o

B. 1. wa, ga 2. ga, ga, gurai 3. no, de, ga 4. no, kara, ga 5. yori, ga 6. ga, ga, wa 7. ni, e, ga, mo 8. no, o, yori

EXERCISE 18 (54-56)

1. no, de, o 2. wa, de, ga, wa 3. de, o, de 4. kara, made, de, de 5. de, ni, de 6. no, de, o, de 7. o, de, de 8. de, dake, wa 9. to dake, de 10. dake no, ni, dake 11. de, to, dake, ni

EXERCISE 19 (57-59)

1. yori, dake 2. de, made, o, dake 3. to, e, o, dake 4. dake, hodo 5. no, de, dake 6. no, de, ga 7. made ni, de, to 8. e, demo 9. wa, ni demo 10. ni, demo

EXERCISE 20 (60-62)

1. o, mo 2. e wa, mo, ga, e wa, mo 3. de, kara, mo 4. ni, ni, ga, mo 5. demo, demo, demo 6. kara, made, bakari 7. de, to, bakari 8. ni, o, bakari 9. o, bakari 10. no, de bakari, o

EXERCISE 21 (63-65)

1. bakari/tokoro, mo 2. kara no, ni, bakari/tokoro 3. to, ni, tokoro 4. no, o, tokoro 5. no, ni, o, tokoro 6. de, o, bakari/tokoro 7. ga, made, de 8. wa, ga, made ni, o 9. ga, wa, e, o, ni 10. ga, ni, ni, o, tokoro 11. ga, ni, o, bakari/tokoro

EXERCISE 22 (66-68)

1. de, o, kara, ni 2. o, kara, de, ni 3. o, nagara, to, mo 4 o, nagara, o 5. o, nagara, de, o 6. ga, o, nagara, de, o 7. o, kara, ga, de 8. ga, no, ni 9. ga, no, no 10. ga, o, mo

EXERCISE 23 (69-71)

A. 1. kara 2. kara 3. kara/node 4. node 5. kara 6. kara/node 7. kara

B. 1. no/ga, o 2. no, ni, no/ga 3. ni, mo, kara/node, ga 4. ga, made ni, kara, demo 5. ga, kara/node 6. kara, mo, ni

EXERCISE 24 (72-74)

1. de, no, no 2. ni, no 3. no, no, ni 4. to, no, to 5. to, ni, no 6. ga, no, made 7. kara, to, no 8. nara, kara, demo 9. o, (no)nara, no 10. ga/o, (no)nara, o

EXERCISE 25 (75-77)

1. no, nara, ni, to, de 2. nara, o, kara, e 3. to, kara, ga 4. ni, to, kara, ga 5. e, to, ya, ya, nado 6. wa, to, ni 7. de, ba, mo 8. o, ni, ba, made ni, ni 9. o, ba, ni 10. ni, ba, de, o

EXERCISE 26 (78-80)

A. 1. o, (no)nara, de, ba 2. ni, o, ba 3. mo, ba, mo 4. mo, ba, mo 5. ga/no, mo, ba, mo

B. 1. tenki ga yokereba/yokattara 2. Tomu ga konakereba/konakattara 3. wakaranakereba/wakaranakattara 4. hon ga omoshirokereba/omoshirokattara 5. ame ga fureba/futtara 6. jikan ga areba/attara

EXERCISE 27 (81-83)

1. ni, tara, ga 2. no, ni, tara, tokoro 3. de, o, tara, yori 4. o, tara, e, o, ni 5. de, o, tokoro, no 6. ni, o, tokoro, de 7. o, te mo, made ni 8. made, de, te mo 9. te mo, o/ga 10. ni, o, wa, te mo

EXERCISE 28 (84-86)

1. wa, to, te mo, te mo 2. ga/no, nara, te mo, te mo 3. te mo, o, nagara 4. te mo, o, mo 5. de, o, te wa 6. ga, made, ni, te wa 7. ga, ga, te wa

EXERCISE 29 (87-89)

1. nomi, ni, to 2. ga, no, nomi 3. ga/no, ni nomi 4. ni/kara, o, made, ni 5. ni made, no, o 6. ga, ba, ni sae 7. de, mo, sae

EXERCISE 30 (90-92)

1. sae, o, no 2. to, sae 3. sae, te mo 4. noni, de 5. ga, noni, bakari 6. nagara, no, o 7. ni, nagara, mo

EXERCISE 31 (93-95)

1. ni, ni/kara, toka, toka 2. to, ni, toka, de, toka 3. de, o, tari, ni, tari 4. o, ga, tari, tari 5. no, tari, tari 6. no, tari, tari

EXERCISE 32 (96-98)

A. 1. ni 2. noni 3. ni 4. noni 5. ni 6. noni

B. 1. kara, e, noni, kurai 2. o, noni, ga 3. no, ni, kiri 4. kiri, to, to, o 5. o, no, ni, no

EXERCISE 33 (99-101)

1. o, kiri, mo 2. ni, o, kiri 3. de, o, kiri 4. no, tomo/nagara, o 5. ga/no, tomo/nagara 6. de, tokoro, tomo/nagara

EXERCISE 34 (102-104)

A. 1. shika 2. dake 3. shika 4. dake 5. shika

B. 1. e, ga, shika 2. wa, de, made shika 3. made, de, shika 4. kara, de, shika 5. mo, shi, mo 6. ni, noni, mo, shi, mo

EXERCISE 35 (105-107)

1. kara, shi, e 2. shi, shi, mo 3. de, o, to, tomo, mo 4. mo, o, node, ni 5. ni, de, tari, o, tari 6. ni, ga/no, o 7. ni, made, o

EXERCISE 36 (108-110)

1. bakari, ni, ka 2. de, ka, mo, o 3. ni, o, ka 4. no, ka, ka 5. ni, o, ka, ka 6. dano, dano, dano, no 7. e, dano, de, dano

EXERCISE 37 (111-113)

1. kara, ga, dano, dano 2. dano, dano, kara, ka, ka 3. no, wa, yori, nado 4. yara, yara, made 5. o, noni, yara, yara, yara

EXERCISE 38 (114-116)

1. o, no, yara, yara 2. ni, yara, mo 3. ga/no, yara, yara 4. te mo, kara, hodo 5. no, no, tomo, gurai 6. o, noni, tomo

EXERCISE 39 (117-119)

1. de, ba, wa 2. ga, wa 3. ni, (no)nara, wa 4. de, made, to 5. to, to, nagara 6. o, (no)nara, nado 7. o, (no)nara, nado

EXERCISE 40 (120-122)

1. demo, kurai 2. sae, kurai 3. o, kara/node, ga, kurai/hodo 4. to, kurai/hodo, ga, ni 5. ba, hodo, ga 6. ba, hodo, noni

EXERCISE 41 (123-125)

1. dake, kara, no 2. kara, o, dake 3. ni, (no)nara, ba, dake/hodo 4. ga/no, ba, dake/hodo 5. ni, to, ga, ga 6. o, to, kara, ni

EXERCISE 42 (126-128)

1. to, to, de 2. ga, to, ga, to 3. ba, nari, de, nari 4. nara, nari, nari 5. de, kara, nari 6. de, nari, no

EXERCISE 43 (129-131)

1. koso, ga/no, yori 2. kara, koso, ni 3. de koso, ga 4. ga, de, koso, ga 5. ni, koso, ni, mo 6. e, te wa, o, mo

EXERCISE 44 (132-134)

1. ga, no, ni, ni 2. ga/no, ni 3. ni, no, ga, o 4. ni, ni, no, ga 5. ni shite wa, ga 6. ni, ni shite wa, ga

EXERCISES 45 (135-137)

1. ni totte, o, no 2. ni totte mo, ni totte mo 3. o, nagara, ni tsuite 4. ni tsuite wa, to, no 5. bakari, kara, tomo, tomo 6. mo, ga, tomo, tomo

EXERCISE 46 (138-140)

1. ga, ga, made, de 2. ga, ga, (no)nara 3. ga, wa, wa 4. to, wa, shika 5. toshite, nagara, o 6. ga, kara/node, o, toshite

EXERCISE 47 (141-144)

1. kara, toshite, o 2. mo, ga, toshite 3. de, bakari/dake, mo 4. ga, bakari/dake, mo 5. ni, nomi, mo 6. nomi, mo, ni

EXERCISE 48 (145-148)

A. 1. oriru ga hayai ka/ oriru ya ina ya
2. tsuku ga hayai ka/ tsuku ya ina ya
3. okiru ga hayai ka / okiru ya ina ya
B. 1. ka 2. ga, ka 3. ka 4. ya, ya

EXERCISE 49 (149-151)

1. kara/node, bakari 2. bakari, kara, o 3. ga, bakari, mo 4. ni, ni, bakari 5. mo, o, noni, sura 6. ga, de, sura

EXERCISE 50 (152-154)

1. no, de(wa), nado 2. nado, ni, to 3. ga, ni, tomo, made(wa) 4. to no, kara, tomo, ni 5. no, tomo, de

EXERCISE 51 (155-157)

1. e, noni, dokoro ka, mo 2. ga/no, dokoro ka 3. ga, noni, dokoro ka, bakari 4. ni, mo, dake ni, ga 5. no, kara, dake ni, ni 6. (no)nara, no, made

EXERCISE 52 (158-160)

1. ni, mono no, e, ka 2. ni, mono no, de, e 3. de, tokoro de, noni, wa 4. tokoro de, made, de 5. o, ni, keredomo, no

EXERCISE 53 (161-163)

1. no, keredomo, te mo 2. keredomo, ni, ni, ga 3. ni, made ni, to, ga 4. ni, ya, e, keredomo 5. ba, de, hodo, keredomo

EXERCISE 54 (164-171)

1. yo 2. ne 3, yo 4. ne 5. nē, yo 6. kashira 7. ne 8. kana

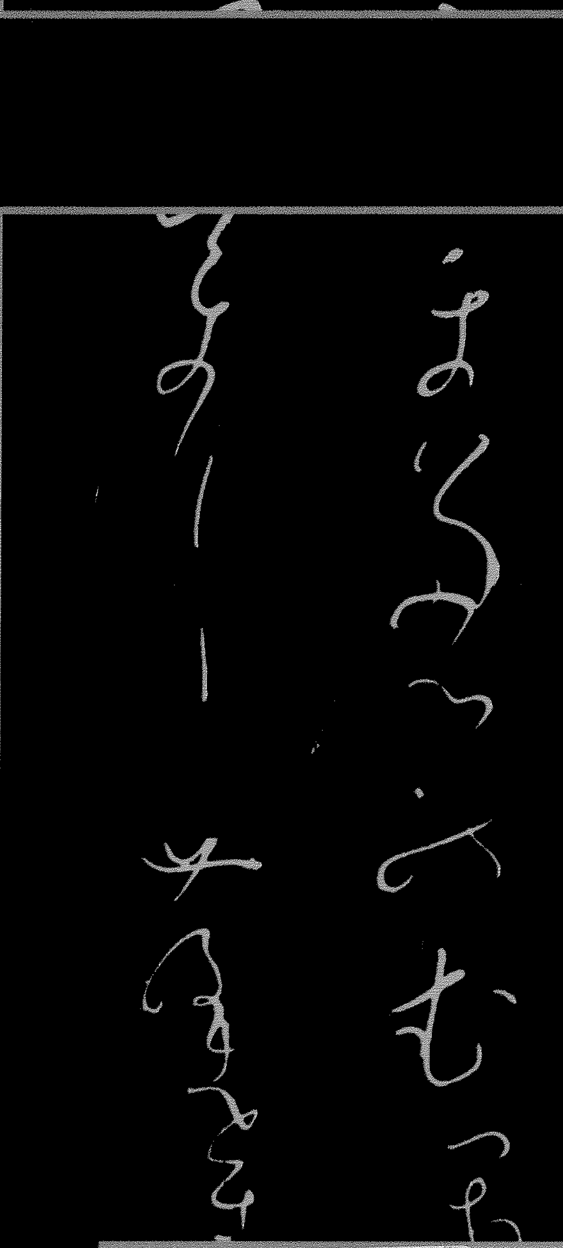
EXERCISE 55 (172-180)

1. na 2. nā 3. nē, no 4. no 5. wa, koto 6. na 7. nā 8. no, wa

EXERCISE 56 (181-188)

1. no, mono 2. kana, tomo 3. ze, ya 4. yara 5. zo, kana 6. tara 7. mono ka

WEATHERHILL
New York & Tokyo



Particles are an essential component of the Japanese language, and a facility with their use is essential for a mastery of both spoken and written forms. This new workbook will help students acquire that facility. It introduces 60 particles and their 188 basic functions in order of frequency of usage. Each function is illustrated with example sentences, and exercises are presented every few lessons to allow users to test their understanding, writing directly in the workbook and checking their work against the answers provided. A basic vocabulary is employed throughout to allow students to concentrate fully on one important goal—the mastery of Japanese particles.

Taeko Kamiya graduated from Doshisha Women's College in Kyoto and holds masters degrees in education and linguistics. She has taught Japanese for 25 years at the Defense Language Institute in Monterey, California.

$24.95

PRICE $24.95
JAPANESE PARTICLE WORKBK
2221
KAMIYA T 5254 Japanese